

# **THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY**

COPYRIGHT, 1925, PRINCETON UNIVERSITY PRESS

*Printed at Princeton University Press, Princeton, N. J., U.S.A.*

TO MY FRIENDS  
IN THE FAR EAST  
IN PARTICULAR  
DR. CARSUN CHANG  
AND  
MR. CH'Ü SHI YING, M. A.

## PREFACE

But the character of this new book is very different from my former publications. For this book, grown out of university lectures, is addressed to an interested general public and deals with its subject in such a way that any person with a general education may follow it. As psychology, in my opinion, is the most important and the most promising of all sciences at the present time, I hope that the number of those who are inclined to follow me may not be small.

It may interest the reader to know that Bertrand Russell's *Analysis of Mind* is also the crystallization of his Peking lectures. I have not referred to his fine work in the text, as I have tried to avoid polemics as far as possible. The reader may compare and may judge himself.

*Leipsic, May 20, 1924*

HANS DRIESCH

## INTRODUCTION

No other science today is so “problematic” as psychology. There is, in fact, almost no question in psychology which is settled in the way that many questions in mechanics or in biology, for instance, are settled. But among all the unsettled questions in psychology there are some problems of the very first order, so to speak, and it is with problems of this kind that this book will deal. These problems have in our day reached a *critical* point, i.e., a point of turning from one aspect to another, and we may hope that under the new aspect they may lose a good deal of their problematic nature. While studying, therefore, the actual *crisis* in psychology, we intend at the same time to lay the foundation-stone of a psychology which will not be forced to pass through a *critical* state again, at least in the near future.

The reason why all psychology is of a problematic character is obvious: The subject-matter of psychology, though the closest, the most immediate to us, is not something that exists in

## INTRODUCTION

space. And the constitution of our mind, unfortunately, is such that an analysis which may proceed to the very last details is possible for us only if the details of a spatial manifoldness are in question. Language, too, has been created with regard to that which is in space, and thus it comes about that with regard to all explanations in the realm of psychology language is rather more of a handicap than a help.

What, then, are the problems "of the very first order" in modern psychology that have reached a critical point nowadays, and that are to be discussed in this volume? There are four such problems, as far as I see: The *mind-body* problem, the problem of the *unconscious*, the problem connected with *psychical research*, and strange to say, perhaps, the problem of the fundamental materials and laws of *normal psychology* pure and simple.

As to the *mind-body* problem, it is well known that the hypothesis of so-called psychophysical parallelism, which seemed to be so well established at the end of the last century, has been attacked and refuted from many different quarters during the last seventy-five years. The

problem of the *unconscious* (and subconscious) has become almost "popular" nowadays, and so has also, to a still greater extent, *psychical research* or "parapsychology." So far, then, there is no question about the problematic and critical character of the subjects chosen for our further discussion.

But what about *normal psychology* pure and simple? Is not this an "official" science of a most elaborate character; has it not been the subject of text-books and manuals for many years? Certainly; and yet we venture to say that "official" normal psychology has become one of the most problematic scientific subjects during recent decades, and that there has hardly been a scientific revolution in our time comparable to that in normal psychology.

We shall now begin at once to go *in medias res*, and have still to say only a few words here about our general arrangement of the various subjects chosen for discussion. I shall arrange all these subjects as if I were writing a complete text-book of psychology. In this way I shall have the opportunity of briefly mentioning and enumerating *all* problems of that thoroughly

problematic science. But most of these problems will be merely mentioned and no more; only the four groups of problems which we have asserted to be "of the very first order" will be discussed more or less fully, and among them normal psychology, pure and simple, will occupy first place and will receive the most elaborate analysis. The advantage gained by this method, it seems to me, is the following: In this way, and in this way alone, will every problem occupy *its proper place in a well-ordered whole*. This is very important, as all "science" is, to be sure, nothing more than *logic*, in the widest sense of the word, or *theory of order*.<sup>1</sup> We shall, then, discuss the *forms of order* of psychical life with special reference to its most important problems.

<sup>1</sup> In my *Ordnungslehre* (2nd edit., 1923) all psychological problems are discussed as parts of my system of logic; cf. chap. D, pp. 315-419.

## CONTENTS

PREFACE	vii
INTRODUCTION	ix
I. NORMAL PSYCHOLOGY	1
1. The subject of psychology	1
2. The theory of materials	6
A. The method	7
B. The theory of elements	12
i. The pure qualities or suchnesses	12
ii. Data with regard to space and time	14
iii. Pleasure and discomfort	15
iv. The accents of order	16
v. The accents of truth	18
vi. The accents of existence	20
C. General remarks on complexes	22
D. The classification of complexes	27
i. The sensible complexes	27
ii. Thoughts	31
iii. Feelings	33
E. The analysis of will	35
F. Summary	42
3. The dynamics of inner mental life	43
A. Association	46
B. Limiting and directing agents	55
C. On so-called reproduction	63
D. The concept of <i>my soul</i>	67
4. Summary	79

## CONTENTS

II.	PSYCHOPHYSICS	85
1.	My body	85
2.	The functional relation between body and mind	90
3.	Some particular problems of psychophysics	94
A.	Weber's law	95
B.	Johannes Müller's law of "specific sense energy"	96
C.	Sensations with a spatial characteristic	98
D.	Action	100
4.	The "other Ego"	105
5.	Mind and body	115
A.	The theory of psychomechanical parallelism	115
B.	Arguments and proofs against parallelism	121
i.	Memory images and originals compared	121
ii.	The recognition of <i>the same</i> in various absolute expressions	123
iii.	The insufficiency of the association theory	125
iv.	Action as a non-mechanical natural phenomenon	126
v.	The physical and the psychical compared	138
(1)	The general structural type in the physical and the psychical	140

## CONTENTS

xv

(2) The degree of manifoldness in the physical and the psychical world	141
vi. Conclusions	145
C. Appendix: A few notes on insanity	149
D. Final remarks on the mind-and-body problem	153
III. THE METAPHYSICS OF MIND	158
IV. THE ORGANIZATION OF MIND	163
1. Critical remarks	164
A. Brentano and Husserl	164
B. On so-called "understanding" psychology	167
2. The soul	169
3. The factors concerned in the acquisition of knowledge	175
4. Various forms of knowing	184
5. The dynamics of will	188
6. On certain modifications of mental life	190
A. Terminology	190
B. The meaning of the word "unconscious"	191
C. Classification and description	193
i. Dreams	194
ii. Hypnosis	199
(1) Physical phenomena	201
(2) Psychophysical phenomena	202
iii. Dissociation	203

## CONTENTS

D.	The causation of hypnosis and its essence	205
E.	Co-consciousness	211
F.	Subconsciousness	214
G.	The essence of co-consciousness and subconsciousness	216
H.	Summary	218
K.	The rôle of the brain	222
L.	Logical remarks	226
V.	<b>PARAPSYCHOLOGY</b>	229
1.	Classification	230
2.	Theory	232
A.	Generalities	232
B.	Physical phenomena	235
C.	Psychical phenomena	236
D.	Psychophysical phenomena	238
E.	Prophecy	241
VI.	<b>THE PROBLEM OF FREEDOM</b>	243
VII.	<b>IMMORTALITY</b>	253
VIJI.	<b>CONCLUSONS</b>	262
1.	The crisis	262
2.	Problems unsolved	267
	<b>INDEX</b>	273

## I. NORMAL PSYCHOLOGY

### 1. THE SUBJECT OF PSYCHOLOGY

**P**OPULARLY speaking, psychology is the theory of the “coming and going” of the contents of my consciousness. But this popular definition is very objectionable; for neither is “consciousness” a well defined thing or object, nor is it something like a pot, “in” which there might be something like a “content.”

In order to define psychology accurately, we must start with a certain most fundamental statement upon which all philosophy (and science) rests, namely, the irreducible and inexplicable primordial fact: *I have something consciously*, or, in brief: I “know” something, knowing at the same time *that* I know,—*scio me scire*.<sup>1</sup>

The full discussion of this primordial fact belongs to a system of philosophy. What interests us here, with respect to our purpose of defining psychology in an adequate way, is the undeniable fact that many of the *somethings* which **I consciously have** are marked by signs or

<sup>1</sup> Augustine.

## 2 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

accents (or however you may choose to describe what is indescribable) which mean or signify that they *have already been had before*. In this sense we used to speak, in popular phraseology, of remembrances or of memory-contents. All these *somethings* with the accent of "having already been had" or, in short, with the accent "*before*," or, rather, the accents themselves, now form a long series according to the specificity of the "*before*": for one "*before*" is *earlier* than another "*before*." The totality of this series, when taken as continuous, is called *time*.

Psychology, then, is the theory of the variety of all the *somethings* which I may *consciously have*, and of the laws<sup>2</sup> which govern the sequence of these various *somethings* in time.

We see at first glance that two different problems are involved in this definition of psychology: the *somethings* themselves, and the sequence of the *somethings*. It is just as it is in chemistry, for instance, where you must first know the variety of the chemical substances, and may then study the laws controlling their change.

<sup>2</sup> The word "law" is taken here in a very wide sense and may be replaced by the term "form of order."

We might speak of a psychological statics and a psychological dynamics as the two main parts of normal psychology. But we prefer to call the first part the *theory of the materials*. *What* is it that I consciously have or "possess"? This must, of course, be the first question. Even here, at the very beginning, the revolution inaugurated by modern psychology will confront us.

A brief historical review will serve to explain what I mean:

Until about 1900 there were, strange to say, two different kinds of psychology; the one "scientific" and of so-called "universal validity," the other made for the private use of each single philosopher, so to speak, at home.

Official and scientific psychology was composed of psychophysics and the theory of association, as established by the classical British authors. This psychology formed almost the whole content of the psychological text-books. The additional part of these text-books which dealt with the so-called "higher functions of the mind" not only was so poor that almost nobody cared to read it, but also was often in direct con-

## 4 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

tradiction with what had been established in the main chapters.

The philosophers now felt most clearly, firstly, that the principle of association, though not wrong, certainly did not cover the whole field of psychical phenomena, and, secondly, that the "higher functions" had been discussed in quite an impossible way. It was for this reason that they made their "home"-psychology for private use. So it was with Leibniz, Wolff, Kant, Hegel, Schopenhauer and many others. Of course, this state of things was not very satisfactory, though it lasted a long time before it broke down.

Three men share the honor of having first seen the impossibility of the psychology of their time: E. von Hartmann, Wm. James and H. Bergson. Modern normal psychology starts with them. But these writers were critics rather than builders; they saw the *impossible*, but did not yet clearly see the *possible et necessarium*. It was in the beginning of the present century that modern normal psychology was really created as a *complete* science of universal validity and not merely as a scientific fragment like association psychology. By different roads the same end has

been reached: Külpe, Marbe and their followers began the analysis of so-called thinking and willing in an exact way, with the result that it was found, firstly, that the variety of the immediate conscious possessions was far greater than had been recognized before, and, secondly, that there exist directing causal agents or factors in psychical life just as in material life, as set forth in the study of biology. Besides this modern psychology of thinking and willing, there came into view several new systems and conceptions of logic, established along different lines by Husserl, Rehmke and myself, which also made it quite evident that the variety within the *something which I consciously have* is very great.

The most important and, I may say, astonishing failure of the older and "classic" normal psychology had been the fact that it did not account for the *meanings*, the *significances*, in our psychical life, i.e., that which renders psychical life "psychical" or "spiritual" in the deeper sense. This was the reason for the strange fact we have mentioned, that there were two psychologies in the past. In fact, a psychology which does not explain *meaning* and *significance* in the single

## 6 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

acts of psychical life, and which does not take sufficient account of the enrichment of that life in meaning and significance during its progress in time, is a psychology that leaves unexplained the main points. The older psychology explained neither the one nor the other. For the only conscious contents which it registered were so-called sensations and images, and its only law was the law of association, i.e., a law formed in analogy to mechanics.

In order to explain meaning and significance in its complex forms and in order to account for its increase in time, meaning and significance must already be among the elements of psychical contents; and direction can never be explained unless there be something that directs. Modern normal psychology has accomplished what had been omitted by the older classic psychology. We shall now show along what lines of analysis this was done.

### 2. THE THEORY OF MATERIALS

We have said already that psychology must begin with a *theory of materials*. That means that we must first find out what those *somethings*

are, which are *consciously had* or possessed. The laws of sequence will then be studied in dynamic psychology afterwards.

The very first glance at the *something* reveals the fact not only that it is almost always, if not, indeed, always, of a complex form, but also that the same kinds of elements occur in the various *somethings* again and again. The first part of a theory of materials will therefore be the theory of psychical elements, the second part the theory of *complexes*. —

How can we discover elements and complexes?

#### A. *The Method*

The answer to this important question is that we discover psychical elements and complexes exclusively by what is generally called *introspection*. “Introspection” is not a very good word for this purpose, but there is no better one in English. In German I should say that we make such a discovery by *Schauen* or by a *Schau*. That means that we realize most consciously and critically what it is that we consciously possess, and, by doing so, know at the same time in a quite definitive way what the elements, the irreducibilities,

## 8 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

the indefinables are. For elements cannot be defined. Introspection in this sense, of course, relates only to what *I* consciously possess; it reveals the elemental objects of *my* "having."

This statement implies two others. It implies, firstly, that all psychology is, at least to begin with, *my* psychology, and that only figuratively have I used the word "we," thus to refer to "other Egos"; the concept of the *other Ego* is a very difficult and complicated one that will be discussed later in its proper place. The statement implies, secondly, that we have to deal with *objects* of *my* "having," and not with "states" or "conditions" or "properties" or "faculties" of the Ego.

In this sense our theory of *elements* stands in close relationship with a certain division of logic, namely the theory of order or the theory of objects (*Gegenstandslehre*—Meinong, Husserl). But it differs from logic in so far as the objects which are consciously had or possessed are considered in the introductory part of psychology only in so far as they are consciously possessed by the *I*, and not, as in logic, as objects in their

mere objectivity, nor as objects "as such." There will be found, for instance, elemental objects such as *green*, the meaning, *relation*; the meaning, *number*. Logic reflects upon these *meanings* as such, in every respect, while the interest of the theory of elements, as an introductory part of psychology, simply consists in stating that so many and such-and-such elements of objects are elements with regard to my *consciously having*.

The school of so-called *behaviorism* denies introspection. Also, many behaviorists even go so far as to maintain that "sensations" are the only objects of my consciously "having." They do not see how great is the variety of objects that we shall describe later on. While this book will avoid all polemics as far as possible, a few words with regard to behaviorism may, nevertheless, be allowed. We omit to consider here the second of the positions above mentioned, because by our own theory of elements this position will be denied implicitly. Let me, then, only make the following criticism: Even if the behaviorists were right in saying that the only class of conscious objects are sensations, this very statement would itself be the result of "introspection"! And,

## 10 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

further, to what class of objects belongs the *truth* of the behavioristic theory itself, that there is nothing but sensations? Is this specific truth itself a sensation? The behaviorists would hardly dare assert that it is, I fancy. So we may say, in short, that the behaviorist *forgets himself* in his psychological theory. Behaviorism is a good method,—nay, the only method—in animal psychology; indeed, in this part of psychology, all knowledge that is really “psychological” can be acquired only indirectly, never directly, for the movements of the body are the only things that are given immediately. But in what we may call the *first*, the original psychology, i.e., *my* psychology, conditions are, fortunately, different. And it for this reason that all other psychologies, the psychology of the *other Ego*, of animals, of instincts, etc., must go back to the first psychology as their very foundation. Not to use introspection in “*my*” psychology would be to proceed as if I always made use of a mirror in order to see what I might see directly—or even worse!

But what about the *experiment*, in modern

psychology, *of thinking and willing*, as applied in the school of Kulpe? Does it not show that another method besides introspection is possible, and therefore preferable? By no means. For the so-called experiment is no proper "experiment" in this case. The experiment consists here only in a directing of the introspection of the "*Versuchperson*," and is nothing else, the concept of the *other Ego* being admitted as a legitimate concept in a provisional way. One instance will suffice: I read to the *Versuchperson* an aphorism of Nietzsche and suggest that he reflect upon what he *consciously has*, firstly, while he understands its meaning, secondly, while he judges about this meaning, whether it be true or not, thirdly, while he compares it with a similar dictum of Goethe. The *Versuchperson* then writes down an account of his "having," and a number of the minutes thus written are material to be analysed by the psychologists. But who is the proper investigator in this case? No doubt, in the *first* place, the *Versuchperson* himself!

We are now well prepared to enter the halls of a proper and complete theory of elements.

## 12 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

### B. *The Theory of Elements*

#### i. *The pure qualities or suchnesses.*

Here I am only able to say: I *have consciously* such, and such, and such an element: *Green, cold, red, hard*, the musical term "*do*," *white, sweet*, etc. We must not think of physics in this primordial part of psychology: *white* and *black* are as elemental as *red* and *green*. We must also not think of sense organs; psychology does not know anything about "sense organs" in the beginning; it quite simply studies the elements which compose the *somethings* which I immediately or *consciously have* or possess. We therefore avoid calling our pure *suchnesses* or qualities "sensations."

But we may say a few words about certain peculiarities connected with various pure *suchnesses*. In the first place they form groups among themselves: the colors, the tones, the smells, etc. Then, there is a good deal to say about the relations which exist among the members of each group: so-called color-geometry and the theory of musical harmony belong here; but this belongs more to logic, in the larger sense, than to the theory of materials as a part of psychology, though it

is customary to deal with the subject in psychological text-books.

More important for special psychological purposes is the fact that each group of *suchnesses* bears in itself some very strange characteristics, among which we shall mention the most important ones: Colors are "outside," are "in space." This is quite elemental. Colors, for this very reason, provide most of the material out of which the concept of an *object of nature* is formed in logic.

We omit the peculiarities of tones, smells, tastes, etc., and say only a few words about the specific characteristics of those qualities which are generally known under the names of "body-sensations" and which, physiologically, used to be referred to the skin, the joints, the muscles, etc. We, of course, take them simply as specific elemental *suchnesses*. But then we find that they are all related to a very strange complex totality; that they occupy a specific place in this totality; that they bear on themselves a specific local-accent ("Lokal-Zeichen"—Lotze) with respect to it. The "totality" we mean is the one on the

## 14 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

foundation of which the important concept of *my body* will be erected later on.

### ii. *Data with regard to space and time*

The quasi-quality *spatial* and the accent of *before* are here in question. The two members of this group are united only as a matter of convenience.

What "spatial" or "near<sup>3</sup> to" means is elemental, because it is indefinable. Spatiality is quite immediately possessed, together with its continuity and its three dimensions (the dimension of depth probably being experienced in the kinesthetic way exclusively and not by sight).

But a corresponding continuous something, "time," is not immediately given. The conception of time as a quasi-line is very misleading, as Bergson was the first to see. To put it in my own terms, as has already been done before:<sup>4</sup> What is immediately present in many *somethings* is an accent of *before* (or after), always specific, one

<sup>3</sup> In the general meaning of the word of course, corresponding to the German "*neben*"; not as the opposite to "far from."

<sup>4</sup> See p. 2.

"before" being *earlier* than another. On the foundation of the totality of the *before*-accents the concept of continuous time is then formed as a theoretical concept. But this belongs to logic, and we, as psychologists, have nothing to do but to register *near to* and *before* as elemental materials put together in one group for practical reasons only.

### iii. *Pleasure and discomfort*

*Pleasure and discomfort* enter as elements into all those complex psychical contents which are generally called feelings. They are like + and —, though not in the sense of mere quantities, but corresponding more to positive and negative electrons. They are not "states of the Ego," as one often finds it asserted, but are objects *to* the Ego, just like *green*, etc. The reason for this wrong opinion seems to be the fact that logic never relates feelings to objects of nature, and that feelings are not among the immediate materials of which the concept of a natural object is formed. Feelings, popularly stated, are "subjective." But, even then, they are *somethings*,

## 16 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

consciously possessed by the Ego. Pain, by the way, is not a feeling, but a pure quality with a strong accent of discomfort.

### iv. *The accents of order*

We now come to the first topic of modern psychology which may fittingly be called revolutionary. We have said that psychical life is full of *meaning*, of *significance*,<sup>5</sup> of *sense*, and that this very feature has been overlooked by the classic psychology, or, at least, has not been appropriately treated by it. Meaning, we have said, must already be among the psychical elements, in order that the actual complex meanings which we consciously have may be understood and explained. Here, then, we meet the first group of elemental meanings:

It is the irreducible and indefinable *logical concepts* that here stand in question,—significances like *this*, *such*, *not*, *related*, *so many*, *because*, *whole and part*, *order*. I have all these meanings *as objects*, just as I have *green*, *sweet*, *pleasure*, *before*. Of course, these significances

<sup>5</sup> In German, “*Bedeutung*” or “*Sinn*.”

are not "sensible," not "*anschaulich*," to use the untranslatable German word, but, nevertheless, they are objects of my "having."

They are objects for me, like all objects; they are not "properties" of the "mind." We do not even know yet what these latter are, either a "property" or a "mind." I merely consciously have something in an order. That is all and remains all. And among the *somethings* that I "have" are those elemental significances which are so-called "abstract" or *unanschaulich* objects. They and they alone are the real primordial "categories." The theory of the categories is therefore, not as Kant believes, an analysis of pure intelligence,<sup>6</sup> but the most primordial branch of the theory of objects of order. For our psychological purposes, of course, all elemental significances come into account, not insofar as their meaning as such is in question, but only insofar as they are consciously possessed; not the meaning "related" stands in question, but the elemental fact, I have the significance "*related*."

<sup>6</sup> "*Analyse des reinen Verstandes.*"

## 18 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

### v. *The accents of truth*

But there are more “abstract” significances which are consciously possessed, besides the logical elementals. There are also, so to speak, *accents of meaning*. We now study the first group of these, which we propose to call the accents of the group of truth.

I say to you:  $\sqrt{a \cdot b} = \sqrt{a} \cdot \sqrt{b}$ , or I explain to you the doctrine of Pythagoras. You understand what I have said and say “all right.” That means that the two contents just mentioned have the accent of being *in order*, of being *final with regard to order*, of being “true.”<sup>7</sup>

If I had said,  $\sqrt{a \cdot b} = \sqrt{a} + \sqrt{b}$ , this statement would have had the accent of “being not in order,” of “being *wrong*.”

And the statement “There are manlike beings on the planet Mars” has the accent of *perhaps*, of “maybe.”

But there are still other accents similar to those mentioned, and therefore put together with them into the same group.

<sup>7</sup> In my system of philosophy I reserve the words “true” or “truth” for metaphysical statements, and speak of “correct” or “correctness” (*Berichtigkeit* in German) in the realm of the theory of order.

Think again of the two mathematical instances:  $\sqrt{a \cdot b} = \sqrt{a} \cdot \sqrt{b}$  and the doctrine of Pythagoras. To many of us these two statements have not only the *accent of finality*, as we may briefly put it, but possess still another accent, namely, the accent of "being already known," of "being an old story" or, more technically, of being *settled*.<sup>8</sup>

Höffding was the first to see the point in question, but what he saw under the expression of a "quality of being known," or "*Bekanntheitsqualität*," covers only part of the field. Höffding did realize that most of the so-called perceptions, at least for adult persons, are not perceptions in the strictest and simplest sense, but recognitions, i.e., perceptions with an accent. But this holds also for very "abstract" contents and by no means for perceptions exclusively.

Of course, as in the whole theory of elemental materials, we have to do here with objects, with *somethings* which I *consciously have*, and this means with "states of the Ego."

The concept of the accent of *being settled* may

<sup>8</sup> In German I say "*Endgültigverzeichen*" for the accent of finality, "*Erledigungszeichen*" for the accent of being settled.

## 20 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

be still further subdivided. A content *A* may bear the accent of being settled or known *itself*, or the accents that *something else* which is necessary in order to understand *A* is settled; but we shall not discuss this point in detail here.<sup>9</sup>

The accent *settled* is very important for the old and famous problem of a *classification of the sciences*. Take, for instance, the science of biology. It implies that physics is settled; this in turn implies the being-settled of geometry; this, in its turn, of arithmetic, and arithmetic, in turn, of pure formal logic. Or take as another instance the principle of the parallelogram of forces: here the meaning of "parallelogram" is settled; in it, the meaning of "4"; in four, the meaning of "this is not non-this," etc.

Thus the concept of *being settled* penetrates logic and for this reason also the whole psychical life.

### vi. *The accents of existence*

This is the third group of elemental abstract meanings and quite the last group of the elemental materials of psychology. I shall speak of

<sup>9</sup> *Ordnungslehre*, 2nd edit., p. 53.

*accents of existence* or, more fully, of the *sphere of existence*.

To show what I mean by this word: Think what the word "cat" signifies, as used in every day life, with respect to the general characteristics of such an animal, i.e., with reference to its mere outlines, but not to its anatomy or physiology. Now the complex object "cat" may have various accents of existence. Thus, if I say, "Look at this cat," this means a cat with the accent of "belonging to empirical reality, to nature." If I say, "I dreamt of a cat last night," there is the accent of belonging to the sphere of dreams. "Remember that cat," the accent of memory images. "Imagine a cat," accent of mere phantasms, etc.

The "Puss in Boots" also has a special accent of existence, and one other than that of another cat in another fairy tale. So, also, "Richard III" has one accent as the King of England studied in history, and another accent as a person in Shakespeare's play.

So much about the elemental materials of which everything is composed which I may possess or have consciously. Our enumeration is

## 22 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

most probably not complete; there are doubtless more than just six groups of elemental materials. But the number is immaterial and unimportant in view of what this book takes as its aims.

### C. *General Remarks on Complexes*

Elements *qua* elements are probably never possessed consciously. It even seems as if every psychical content were made up by at least one element of each of the six groups enumerated.

Think, for instance, of a circular figure of red color; this is, in fact, a very simple content. And yet you experience, firstly, the quality red; secondly, spatiality; thirdly, you enjoy, very slightly perhaps, color and form; fourthly, the figure you see is a *such* and not a *non-such*; fifthly, you *know* it already; and sixthly, it exists only in your *imagination*.

Thus we have everything we want. Some of the accents may be very feeble, but they are found to be present, if only we look closely.

If, then, all complex contents in psychical life are of the same form of complexity at bottom, how can we classify those complexes, as is done

in every text-book of psychology? We classify according to the principle of *a priori*, i.e., according to the prevailing element. But in the last resort we must never forget that a perception is also a feeling and a thought,—a thought is never quite free of feeling and perceiving, etc.

But there are other much graver difficulties that face us when we approach the theory of complex contents, and it is with these fundamental difficulties that we must deal first of all.

We have said just above that probably every single psychical content will be found to contain at least one element of each of the six fundamental groups, "if only we look closely." What does this mean? Does it not seem to suggest that the psychical contents have a sort of independent existence besides that of being *consciously had*? And have we not said, on the other hand, that "somethings" *are* only insofar as they are *consciously had* or possessed? But here still another difficulty arises. I always "have" consciously *what* I have. But having a feeling, for instance, is not analysing it; in order to analyse it, I must have, not the feeling, but *my having my feeling*. This can only occur by a new special "act"

## 24 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

*afterwards.* How, then, can I know what I *have* had, and what does it mean, when I say that “what I *have had*” is possibly something other than what I thought it to be before? This, in fact, is a paradox and a great difficulty. In any case we are forced to say that it looks *as if* the psychical contents had their proper independent existence; in any case they are implicitly regarded in such a way.

Strictly speaking the situation seems to me to be as follows: I want to analyse, say, a special case of a *hoping*,—for instance, the hope that my child will recover from illness. I have this case of hoping several times, speaking in the popular phraseology, and now I discover more and more details in it, as time advances. To put it correctly, each “hope” was another hope, was another *something* I had, and only in a very complicated hypothetic sense am I entitled to say that there *was* always the same hope, which was *confusément apperçu* at first, to use a phrase of Bergson’s, and clearly conceived in all its details only at the end. But the hypothesis may be admitted for the sake of brevity, though it implies a certain metaphysical statement, if not

even paradox, that I have had a *something* which I did not "have." Perhaps we might better say "that I *might* have already had the first time, had I given my full attention to the analysis."

But now a new difficulty arises, which was first seen by Bergson. I never *can* have the very same content a second or third time, because, by its having been had already, it is made different from what it was the first time! For the second or any subsequent time, that content carries in itself two accents: one of *before* and another of *already known*, which it did not carry when it was possessed first. Thus every content is exclusively what it is and there *cannot* be two quite identical contents.

Our theory of *accents* acquires its greatest importance here. What I consciously possess in the *now* bears an enormous number of accents of two different kinds. Firstly, it embraces, in the form of accents of *being settled*, everything which I have had before with regard to its content; and, secondly, it refers to all accents of the form *before*. Each accent enters into the other.

It seems a paradox, but it is none the less

## 26 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

true, that in the *now* I always have implicitly my whole former psychical life. There is not a temporal continuity in my “having,” as we shall see later on; but there is a continuity or penetration of contents. This is what Bergson calls durée, it seems to me.

But does not psychology become absolutely helpless in the face of these astonishing facts? Are its general conditions not far more full of difficulties than those of the sciences of nature? For in spatial nature every single state or event differs from every other only insofar as each occupies its special locality in space and time, while in psychical life every content is only itself with regard to *quality*.

It is true, psychology can only save itself by strenuous methods, if it wants to classify its complex psychical contents. At present it disregards the various accents of *before* and *being settled*; it does not take them into account. Yet only if this is done is the way open for classification; we must, however, remember what we said above, namely, that nothing but a classification *a posteriori* is possible.

### D. *The Classification of Complexes*

Let us, then, begin to work out a classification of complex psychical *somethings*. We do not intend to go very deeply into details in this chapter, but shall mention only what is either important with respect to later parts of this book, or what serves to reveal to us the very essence of modern normal psychology and its difference from earlier psychological doctrines.

#### i. *The sensible complexes*

*Sensibility*<sup>10</sup> prevails in the complex contents in question. We used to speak of "sensations" and "perceptions" as well as of "images." The images may belong to the sphere of dreams, of memory, or of phantasy. But the sphere to which they belong is a matter of no importance to the main outlines of the classification, for, as regards this, they are considered only with re-

<sup>10</sup> I cannot find a better English word for the German *Anschaulichkeit*. Of course we must not think of senses or sense organs, which are assumed to be not yet known to us in this part of psychology, where we are doing nothing but analyse what *I consciously have* in its immediateness.

## 28 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

spect to what they *are* in their very *immediateness*, i.e., in their being consciously possessed. In this respect a perceived horse and a dreamt horse and a remembered horse may be the same horse with regard to "sensibility," only the accents of existence<sup>11</sup> being different. We may fall into error occasionally with respect to these accents,—in the moment of waking up, for example, or when suffering from hallucinations. But this problem belongs to the theory of knowledge, and not to psychology.

But there is another difference among complexes in which sensibility prevails that is of greater importance for classification than the question of accents of existence. This is the difference between *shadow-like* and *body-like*<sup>12</sup> sensible contents, a difference which may be most easily understood by saying that the former look like a black-and-white drawing, the latter like a bit of colored sculpture.

Sensible contents with the accent of *belonging to empirical reality* are always body-like; they

<sup>11</sup> See page 21. Husserl would speak of "*regionale Kategorien*" in this case.

<sup>12</sup> "*Leibhaftig*" in German.

are called perceptions in the restricted sense of the word.

Contents of a hallucinatory character may be either body-like or shadow-like.

Dream contents are almost always body-like.

Phantasy and memory contents, i.e., "images" in the restricted sense, are generally shadow-like, at least in adults, but usually body-like in artists and, as Taeusch has discovered, in young people until about the fifteenth year.

To sum up the most important points: There are two *phenomenological* differences among sensibilities, the one relating to the general sensible habitus, the other to the accent of existence. With regard to sensibility as such, the first of these comes into account only as shadow-like or body-like. The second difference has to do with something that is not sensible, but only connected with sensibility. These differences are independent of each other. For the sensible character of a body-like sensibility *as such* does *not* tell us by itself whether we possess a perception, a hallucination, a dream image, or a memory image. The accent must be made out by a rather complicated process belonging to the co-called

## 30 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

theory of knowledge, namely, by reflecting upon the relations in which the content in question stands to other contents. The accent belongs to one of the group of elemental *meanings* of an "abstract" character. It never fails to exist. Thus we see that the sensible is never without the non-sensible. This proves our statement that all classification of complex-psychical *somethings* is only a classification *a posteriori*.

The following table sums it all up :

### 1. Body-like sensibilities :

- a* with accent *perception*
- b* with accent *dream image*
- c* with accent *hallucination*
- d* with accent *memory image*
- e* with accent *phantasy image*

### 2. Shadow-like sensibilities :

- a* with accent *hallucination*
- b* with accent *memory image*
- c* with accent *phantasy image*

A certain variety among memory images may be mentioned: memory images may have the

general indefinite accent *before* or the definite accent *at that point of the past*. The phantasy image has no time accent.

## ii. *Thoughts*

By the word *thought* we shall denominate those *conscious somethings* the elemental constituents of which are to a great extent or almost exclusively of the type of so-called "abstract" nature, i.e., strictly speaking, meanings or significances.

What I mean when speaking of a dog, a table, or a pen is something that contains already a good many "abstract" elements, for I cannot have a *thing* in the form of a mere sensibility; *thing-ness*, so to speak, is nothing sensible, but a meaning. Thus *things*, as *somethings* which are possessed consciously, stand, as it were, midway between sensibilities and thoughts.

Pure thoughts are generally complexes of relations and meanings of the most various kind. Keep in your mind the complex *something*: "Hume's philosophical system" or, more complex still, "The difference between the systems of Kant and Hume." These are instances of

## 32 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

thoughts, i.e., of *somethings* which consist almost completely of elements which are not of sensible nature, and are not feelings. They consist exclusively of meanings of order and of various sorts of accents, it seems.

“It seems”—here we come into contact with a problem recognized by Aristotle. Are there thoughts which are *absolutely* free from anything sensible? That is the question much discussed nowadays in the school of Külpe. Of course, different Egos—to use the popular term—may vary in this respect. My personal opinion is that there exists in every case what I might call the sensible *bearer*<sup>18</sup> of a thought, but that this bearer is not a fixed and definite one for every sort of thought, and that anything sensible may “bear” anything abstract. If, for instance, I am thinking of “Nietzsche’s philosophy” I find that I either have the letter *N* before my optical phantasy, or that my fingers move a little as if they were to write *N*, or that my lips are moving correspondingly, etc. But this is all. Any optical or kinesthetic or acoustical bearer may support a thought. This bearer is, however,

<sup>18</sup> “*Träger*” in German.

of no importance at all for the main thing in question; only it must not be missing. We may speak of an *all-too-human* restriction in this case and may refer briefly to Bergson's statement that numbers, or, strictly speaking, *so many's*, cannot be possessed consciously without some spatial foundation in the form of points, lines, etc., though the meaning of *so many* has nothing to do with space at all.

### iii. *Feelings.*

Let us first remark once more<sup>14</sup> that feelings are not "states" of the Ego, but *somethings* or objects which I consciously have. They may indicate states of the mind or soul; but *mind* and *soul* are terms which we do not yet well know; in any case they do not mean the same as the words *I* or *Ego*.

Feelings are thoughts with a strong and prevailing accent of one of the elements *pleasure* or *discomfort*. They may be classified, but the classification relates to their substantial nucleus exclusively, i.e., to the complex thought-contents to which pleasure or discomfort is attached, the

<sup>14</sup> Cf. p. 8.

## 34 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

pleasure and discomfort as such being always the same. Feelings have a certain *intensity* which will become important in the theory of *will*. But it is not merely this intensity that comes into account in the sphere of this theory, but something else as well, namely, that which has been called *depth* or *weight* (Krüger), and which in my own terminology would be best styled the accent of *being in order*, or, of *finality*. Whenever there is any sort of competition of different feelings with regard to their determining so-called "will," the intensity of one feeling may act in competition with the finality of the other, say, in a moral respect. The intensity is attached to the accent of elemental pleasure or discomfort, the accent of finality to the substantial nucleus or to one of its parts.

The whole theory of feelings is still, however, in a very unsettled and provisional state. We therefore omit details here and proceed to the analysis of one very important complex *something* which stands in the middle ground between feeling and thought, and which is regarded as a special class of *somethings* by many authors: *will*. The analysis of will is to form the next section

of this chapter. It will imply very many important problems of a general kind and may serve at the same time as a good instance of what a proper *analysis* of a complex *something* ought to be.

### E. *The Analysis of Will*

We shall analyse will as a *something* that is consciously had, and not as a "faculty" or property of the "mind," also not as an active "conscious process" starting from the Ego. At least we do not know, at the very start, whether there exists any such thing as a "conscious process." We simply analyse into its elements what I consciously have when I *will*. That is the whole task.

Suppose I *will* to write a letter, say, a very important letter, but one which is not very pleasant but rather disagreeable to write. But it must be written. What do I *have* while I am "willing" to write?

I have consciously, while having the *will* to write:

*Firstly:* What may be called a *substantial nucleus* of the form, *written letter*. This is a

## 36 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

thought with a good many sensible elements in it; I may even "see" something like a written letter in my imagination.

*Secondly:* The nucleus "written letter" carries varied accents. Thus, it exists *now* only in my *imagination*, and this is rather *unpleasant*. But *later* it will be *real*, in the empirical sense, and that will be *pleasant*. Here are six accents altogether or, rather, twice three. The words denoting the accents are printed in italics. We see that the accents are of time, of feeling and of the sphere of existence. The six accents are present at once, penetrating one another in an almost inexpressible way. Sometimes one accent is in the foreground, sometimes another. But all six are always present, to a certain extent at least.

So far we have analysed not will, but *wish*. The analysis given up to this point may, in fact, be called the analysis of *wish*, if only we notice that in this case an accent of *perhaps* must be added: *perhaps* the wish is to be fulfilled, *perhaps* it is not. We may now continue our analysis of will:

*Thirdly:* It is *I* who wills. The accent of *I* is strong.

*Fourthly:* There is some kinesthetic sensation, say, in my hand, as if I were already beginning to write. Such a sensation probably never fails to exist, but is as immaterial to the main point as the *bearer* of a thought, discussed in a former paragraph.

But now we come to the main points, i.e., to those constituents of the complex in question which may properly be said to form the very essence of *will*:

*Fifthly:* *I will*, and I know that *I can*. Who is the one who *can*? Correctly stated not I, but my body, my hand for example. *It can and I know that it can*.

To put it in strictly technical terms: I know with the accent of *being settled* that my body is able to play an important causal part in the (empirical) realization of the nucleus of my will.

Here we have the point which sharply separates *will* from *wish*: I cannot "will" to fly to Mars, but can only wish it, because I have the final knowledge that my body is *not* able "to plan an important causal part in the realization of the nucleus" in question.

*Sixthly:* What I will, *ought to* be done. The

## 38 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

content of my willing has an accent of the class of *being in order*. This accent may be very strong in so-called moral or ethical willing. But we never miss it, though it may often be rather unimportant in any ethical respect. I *approve*, we may also say, the content of my will. The approving may be the result of a conflict, of a competition of feelings; this point belongs to genetic psychology and does not interest us here, where we are only discussing the materials. In any case I *have* the "approving" whenever I will, from whatever source it may come genetically.

So far we have analysed will as the prerequisite of action. This may be called centrifugal will. But there exists *inner* or *centripetal* will also. I may *will* to be attentive, to remember something, to utter a name, to solve a problem. In this case everything is the same as in our analysis of centrifugal will, except that some terms have to be changed. These are combined in the phenomenon of "inner will." There are:

*Firstly:* The nucleus, i.e., the idea of "my consciously having attention, or the name, or the solution."

*Secondly:* Six accents of time, sphere of exist-

ence and feeling, i.e., the nucleus is at *present* merely *vague* and this is *unpleasant*, but it will be in the *future* a *clear conscious something* and this will be *pleasant*.

*Thirdly:* It is *I* who wills.

*Fourthly:* Kinesthetic sensations, perhaps in the skin of the face.

*Fifthly:* I will and I *can*. *Who "can"*? Not *I* in the proper sense, but a something yet unknown (afterwards to be called *my mind*). I know that my mind is able to transform the nucleus into the clear conscious state.

*Sixthly:* The nucleus *ought to* stand consciously before me.

Thus we have finished our analysis of willing. We now know what we have found. But more important, perhaps, is what we have *not* found!

In the analysis of will as well as of thought we did *not* find any element of *conscious activity*, of *doing*, even of *becoming*. We found, so to speak, only static elements in a *something* that was had or possessed, that was "object."

We are, then, not allowed to say: I will and *I do*, but: I will and *it happens* or, if you like it better, I will and *my body* (*my mind*) acts, or

## 40 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

moves, or does. With respect to consciousness there is a *gap* between *my willing* and the *doing* of my body or my (unconscious) mind. This was seen by Hume.

What holds good for willing in the restricted sense also holds good for so-called thinking, for "reflecting" about something, etc. Please note well that we have not once made use of the verb to "think," but only the expression "I have a thought."

*Willing and thinking as conscious activities do not exist.* They occur neither among the elemental nor among the complex materials of conscious life.

Let us add still a few words about what is popularly called thinking or reflecting "over" something (*nachdenken* in German). What do I consciously have in this case, say, if "I reflect" over the solution of a mathematical equation of the second degree?

I *have* a good many things, one after the other, in this case, but "I" do *not* "make" the second out of the first:

At the beginning I have the equation as it stands in the book, implying its meaning. Almost

at the same time I have the general scheme of the solution of such equations:

$$x = -\frac{a}{2} \pm \sqrt{\frac{a^2}{4} - b}$$

Then comes the scheme of transformation: the equation must be brought into the form:

$$x^2 + ax + b = 0.$$

All this forms the starting point. And then *I* "do" absolutely nothing, but "it" *does* and puts before me what it has done. And now "it comes to me" ("es fällt mir ein," as we say in German) that a certain transformation of the original equation is possible, say by division, which brings it nearer to the standard form. I do nothing again; but "it comes" again, and so on, until finally *a* and *b* have their definite values. The empty schema is no longer a mere schema but the solution.

We shall come back to this problem in detail later on. Let me, then, only say at this point: "Thinking over something" is not a conscious doing, but is a "having" of a sequence of *somethings* in the run of time each of which is *richer in finality* with regard to the task to be solved

## 42 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

than its antecedent. So it is at least if “all goes well.”

### F. *Summary*

If we look back upon our theory of psychic materials, we find that it differs fundamentally from almost all earlier psychological systems in two different respects:

Firstly: *Meaning*, which had been overlooked in its objective character in almost all former systems, has got its proper place in the theory of elements: I *have consciously* various forms of meaning or significance just as I *have* “green” or the note “re.” For this reason our psychology will not fail to explain the very complex meanings of which our whole conscious life consists.

Secondly: We do *not* speak of a *conscious activity*, which had been regarded as a self-evident fact by earlier psychologists. No such activity exists! Psychical doing, becoming, performing, and, therefore, thinking and willing also, taken as *processes*, *do not belong to the conscious sphere*.

But where, then, do they belong?

The raising of this important problem leads

us to the next section of our book, in which we shall discuss the laws which the temporal sequence of the *somethings* which I *consciously have* really obeys.

### 3. THE DYNAMICS OF INNER MENTAL LIFE

The problem we have now to discuss is this:

Given a sequence in time of *somethings* consciously possessed by the *I* or *the Ego*,<sup>15</sup> what *forms of order* are to be discovered among these *somethings* with regard to their temporal sequence? In what way can that which happens be understood by analogy to causality in nature, i.e., in such a way that what is or happens now has, as it were, its sufficient reason in what has happened or been before?

Causal conception of the temporal sequence of conscious contents would be a rather easy matter if the connection between a content *A* and the next content *B* were itself consciously possessed as a causal, a dynamic, connection,

<sup>15</sup> I prefer to say "by the *I*" because the term, *Ego*, may suggest something like a theory or substance which is not at all in question here. "*I*" in its strict sense, ought not to be subjected to declination!

## 44 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

*if I were making B out of A, and if I consciously knew about my doing so.* But this, we have seen, is not the case. My consciously having is static, not dynamic. I merely *have consciously*. This, in fact, is all. I do not "do" consciously.

It follows from this that causal connections between the various conscious contents succeeding one another in time are *not immediately possessed by the Ego*, but are only *meant, as if* they existed independently, in just the same way in which forces, affinities, energies in nature are "meant" as quasi-existing, but are not immediately known in the way in which I know about the "materials," elemental or complex, which we have studied in the preceding sections. Causal psychology, in fact, has a great similarity to natural science from the logical point of view, and all the concepts which will play a part on the following pages of this book may be compared with such concepts as potential energy, embryonic potency, electric potential, etc., but *not* with will, feeling, and thought, as heretofore described. This will be clearer as our discussion proceeds.

We now begin our analysis proper. This an-

alysis, at first, will consider only the temporal sequence of such conscious *somethings* as belong to what is generally called *inner* psychical life, namely, to the so-called stream of consciousness, including images, thoughts, feelings, willings, etc. At first we shall *not* have to do with so-called sensations and perceptions, i.e., with what comes to us through the senses, to put it in popular language.

This also is one of the points in which modern psychology differs widely from the older psychology. The older psychology, almost always, was established on the foundation of a naïve realism, i.e., of a primitive and popular metaphysics, which, without any criticism or analysis, regarded "mind," "body," "senses," "sense organs," "other conscious Egos," etc., as *being*, or, as *existing*.

Our psychology does not know, at the beginning, what all these terms mean. It knows *only* that I *have consciously something* and that I have *different somethings* in the sequence of time. For this alone is quite beyond doubt. And it also is beyond doubt that there are a good many sequences of conscious *somethings* which

## 46 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

do not need any reference to what is popularly called "body," "sense organ," etc. It is the totality of such sequences which we call "human psychical life."

We have made use of the popular expression, a "stream of consciousness." The expression, of course, is not quite correct. For, as our theory of materials has shown us, there is no such *stream*. I now have *this* content, and *then that*, and *then that*, etc. But I have nothing *between this and that and that*; in particular, I "have" no "doing," no "making," between them in a conscious way. A sequence of electric sparks would be a far better analogy to what the sequence of conscious contents really is than the analogy of a "stream."

### A. Association

The theory of so-called *association* is the most simple and, at the same time, the oldest of all theories of scientific psychology. This theory is fully explained in every psychological text-book. We therefore may treat it very briefly, explaining it in our own terms:

There is a something, which at first we shall

simply call *X*, *in* which, though not in the spatial sense of the word "in," *are* all those contents which may consciously be possessed in the future. But these contents are there, of course, not in the conscious state, for only one of all possible contents is conscious at a given moment of time. In what state, then, *are* they in the *X*? The answer is: In an *unconscious* state, and the something we have called *X*, *in* which the unconscious contents are, is itself unconscious also.

Here, then, we meet for the first time the much disputed term of the *unconscious*. We meet it at the very entrance to association psychology, the most simple form of all theoretical psychology. What does the word "unconscious" mean? It certainly does *not* mean "physical" or "natural"; it means "psychical but not conscious-psychical." *The term is negative in form only.* like the term "immortal," for instance. It means something positive, which, while we do not know it in the peculiarities of its existence, nevertheless we know to be "psychical" in a very general and vague sense. The "unconscious" belongs to that general realm of empirical being which we call the "psychical" realm of empirical existence.

## 48 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

“Unconscious,” and yet not physical, we may also say is a *concept* of theory that is presupposed in order to “explain.” But to explain what? The answer is: The sequence of conscious contents as it *immediately* is. Thus we see that the very first step in causal psychology leads us right out of the realm of our immediate “possessions” into the realm of a community of *somethings* all of which are merely *meant as if* they existed, just as in the case in the science of nature.<sup>16</sup>

How, then, does it happen that out of the many *unconscious somethings* which are “in” the unconscious *X*, always one, at a given moment, becomes a consciously possessed *something*, and what are the general principles according to which the change from the unconscious state of a certain *something* into the conscious state is due?

*Association* is the principle, we are told. And by this term is meant the following:

Every content has two kinds of faculties or latent forces, as it were. When in the conscious state, one content may awaken another content

<sup>16</sup> Cf. *Ordnungslehre*, 2nd edit., 1928, pp. 146 *f.* and 382 *f.*

to consciousness; when in the unconscious state it has the faculty of being awakened. And this awakening occurs according to the association principle: Those *pairs* of contents, say *A* and *B*, which have *often* been consciously had together or immediately after one another, or those pairs, which, though they have been consciously possessed only once, were marked by a strong accent of feeling, stand in "association affinity." That means that when one of these contents stands before the conscious Ego, it most probably will awaken that other content with which it forms a pair.

This, at least, is so-called association by contiguity, i.e., association proper. Text-books also tell us of association by similarity and contrast; but this is a very vague concept, since, in a certain sense at least, every content stands in "similarity" to every other and also in "contrast" to every other. A cat is not only similar to a dog, since both are animals, but also stands in "contrast" to a dog. But a cat is also "similar" to a tiger, also to coffee, as the *words* "cat" and "coffee" both begin with a "c."

Thus the principle of association by similar-

## 50 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

ity and contrast very evidently lacks univocality. *A*, when conscious, may, according to that principle, arouse into consciousness *B*, but also *C*, or *D*, or *E*, etc.

But is association by contiguity much better? *A* has been together with *B* very often. Well, but it was also "together" with *C* or *D* or *E*. On what, then, does it depend, that at one time *B* is aroused by *A*, at another time *C*, and at a third time *D*, as is practically the case? Univocal determination is lacking also here.

The *law* of association is therefore not a real "law." What, for example, would the principle of Galileo tell us, if it took the form: A body in motion goes either straight on with the same velocity, or with an increasing or decreasing velocity, or it moves in a curve, or it turns round a corner, etc., etc.? But Galileo's principle does not, as a matter of fact, have this "form," which is a form incapable of establishing any principle. Galileo's principle does not speak of a body in motion, but of a body in motion "left to itself," and of this it affirms inertia. But the so-called "principle" of association is, in fact, like the first, or false, formulation of Galileo's law.

And even if the association principle did not lack univocality, it would still not be able to explain what is to be explained. We here reach a point of first importance.

As time proceeds, the so-called inner psychical life becomes richer and richer in contents which have the accent of being final, of being "in order," of being "true," etc. And, besides, there are *new* contents appearing in inner life in the course of time, contents which may be of the form of a phantasy image or of the form of a thought, but which in any case are not mere repetitions of what has been had consciously before.

Both these features constitute the most important characteristics of psychical life, for psychical life is a matter of meaning or significance not only in a static, but also in a dynamic way. That is to say: not only is there meaning among its contents, elemental or complex, but the whole course of that life is directed towards an increase of meaning. It consists, so to speak, in an enrichment by meaning.

The association theory, however, even in its broadest form, including association by similar-

## 52 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

ity and contrast, is absolutely unable to explain these important features of psychical life. It has nothing to do with enrichment of meaning, because it has nothing to do with meaning at all. It is absolutely incapable of explaining the origin of any new content, be it nothing more than a phantasy image. For the association theory is by its very essence a theory of *copying* and cannot be more.

This, then, is the greatest defect of the association theory. It is not able to explain the chief characteristics of psychical life as they really are. This defect is fatal.

This defect was, of course, seen by a good many psychologists, but for a long time they did not know how to evade it. At first, they tried to introduce the concepts of *constellation* and *preparedness*. Though these concepts are by no means sufficient, they at least mark the first step of theoretical progress. Thus, the unconscious contents in the unconscious *X* were regarded as being in various relations to one another, the totality of these relations being a "constellation," though not in the spatial sense of the word, of course. In connection with their con-

stellation the contents were regarded as being in different ways "prepared" to follow the associative stimulus that went out from a content which happened to be in the conscious state at a given moment of time.

This view, it is true, was a sort of quasi-mechanics of more than the one dimension, which is, so to speak, the character of the classical association theory. But, even then, such a view was by no means all that was required. For a quasi-mechanics of more than one dimension still remains quasi—"mechanics," i.e., a causal theory that begins with singularities, and proceeds from these, in their very singleness, to the totalities to be explained.

But *this* is the main point at issue. All sorts of quasi—"mechanics" are to be given up, if psychical life is to be explained as it really is, and it does not much matter whether we work on the analogy of a one-dimensional mechanics or of a many-dimensional one. In either case we have the concept of a system which is the *sum* of its parts, and it is this very concept that cannot explain psychical life as it really is.

There were a few, Höffding, for example, who

## 54 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

tried to bring the concept of *wholeness* into the old association theory. A law was proclaimed according to which there was an *associative affinity* between "part" and "whole," each part having the faculty of awakening the corresponding whole into conscious existence and vice versa. But in this theory, in the first place, whole and part were regarded as being *fixed* psychical quasi-things, so to speak, waiting merely to be called. And, secondly: Are there not a large number of "wholes" in relation to a given "part," and vice versa? A fox is part of a zoological garden, of a hunting party, of the zoological system, of a museum, even the "Reinicke Fuchs" of a fairy tale. Universal determination is lacking here also.

We must have other *dynamic* factors than merely "associative affinity" or forces. And all additions heretofore made to the classical association theory were only, to put it briefly, of a static kind.

The dynamic factors, then, which are needed for a complete causal theory of psychical life are of two kinds. We must have *limiting* agents and *directing* agents.

**B. Limiting and Directing Agents**

By "limiting" agents I understand such unconscious causal psychical factors as reduce the number of possible associations, i.e., of all those associative affinities which might possibly be awakened, if the pure association theory were true. A certain content *A*, now in the conscious state, may be in affinity with *B, C, D, E....* .... *X, Y, Z*. The limiting factor now stops, let us say, 15 of these 25 possibilities; then there remains only a choice among 10. Of course, we have not gained a univocal determination so far, but we are at least on the way to it.

A few simple examples will serve to illustrate more clearly what is meant by *limiting* psychical dynamic factors. If we are occupied with, say, an historical problem, almost exclusively contents of an historical nature appear before us. The same is true in everyday life, as is well known.

But, of course, we need more than this. We must find an unconscious dynamic agent that leads the single branches of the so-called "stream" of consciousness—which in fact is not a stream, as we know<sup>17</sup>—to their relative

<sup>17</sup> Cf. p. 46.

## 56 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

ends, i.e., to some definite final contents which are *in order*. For all psychical life is nothing but various chains of contents the final link of which is "order."

Let me illustrate, by a few examples, what is meant by this expression. I shall do this at first in a more or less popular way, and shall bring in a technical formulation later.

We all know what is meant by the words, that somebody has to perform a task, or, that he *stands under a task*, as we prefer to say. Let us, then, discuss what happens in psychical inner life, when we "stand under a task" and have to perform it. People used to say in this connection that we "think" over the task and finally find (or do not find) the solution. This statement, however, cannot be accepted by us, as we now know that I *only consciously have something*, but am not "doing" something consciously. Thinking as a conscious kind of doing, making, even "*becoming*" does not exist; to think, if we wish to use the word at all, means nothing more than to *have* a thought, and never anything else, at least in the sphere of the conscious.

What, then, must we say instead of saying

that I "think" over the task in order to perform it? We have already briefly mentioned (page 40), what the real "materials" are which are immediately present to the Ego, whenever popular language speaks of "thinking over a task."

There are the consecutive moments of time *A, B, C, . . . . . N*. At each of these moments a *something* relating to the task is consciously possessed by the Ego that "stands under" it. Each subsequent *something* is richer in order, with regard to the task's performance, and at the end, at the moment *N*, there is full order with regard to the task, *final order*, order with the accent of finality or however we may choose to put it.

This discussion of what consciously happens while "solving" a task, may still be, however, a little too abstract and general. We have not yet mentioned certain peculiarities of great importance.

In what form do I know that I am "standing under" a task? How is my "standing under" it consciously possessed?

In order to discuss this important question in an appropriate way, it will be best to study first

## 58 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

some particular tasks, "under which one may stand."

Let us assume that a schoolboy has to solve a mathematical equation of the second degree. What, then, does the boy *consciously have* at the start? He has a certain visual image, i.e., the written or printed equation, which has a certain relational character. But he also has the general formula of the solution, which consists of two parts or, rather, steps. For, firstly, the equation must be brought into the form:

$$x^2 + ax + b = 0,$$

and, then, secondly, the special values of  $a$  and  $b$  must take their places in the equation:

$$x = -\frac{a}{2} \pm \sqrt{\left(\frac{a}{2}\right)^2 - b}.$$

Now our schoolboy begins to "think over" the solution. That means, as we know, that *he* does nothing. But a something, which we may again call  $X$ , as we called it before when speaking of the association theory, *does* for him; and this in such a way that the next content which he *consciously has*, after the original one, is a cer-

tain transformation of the given equation, say, by a division by a common factor on both sides that renders the equation much easier to investigate. Then another content comes to our schoolboy, and, perhaps, two more such contents, each of them nearer to the *being in order*, i.e., to the solution. And then suddenly the solution is there.

Let us call the general formula of the solution of an equation of the second degree an *anticipated schema*. Then it is the task given to our schoolboy to fill this schema with content on the foundation of the equation presented to him. It is as if there were a tension between the anticipated schema and the original equation. This tension acts in the unconscious *X* in a definite and *directing* way, after *limiting* factors have already restricted the number of possible associations.

Let us take another instance: A boy wishes to "remember" a name, say of a king of France. He has in the beginning as his *anticipated schema* the totality of the relations of a certain period of European history; most of the schema is filled with content, but there is at a certain

## 60 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

point a gap, the relations of which are quite fixed on all sides, namely: the *forgotten* name of the king. The boy again “does” nothing, but the unconscious *X* “does,” under the influence of the tension between empty schema and schema filled with content, and finally the name is remembered and,—a rather strange thing but nevertheless true,—is recognized at the same time *as* the name in question.

What we have described so far has been studied experimentally on a very broad foundation by the psychologists of the Külpe school. The “task” was given to the “*Versuchsperson*” of making out whether two given concepts were subordinated one to the other, or coordinated, and whether they stood in the relation of whole and part or of universal and particular. The “*Versuchsperson*” had to decide and write down what he had “consciously possessed” during his so-called “thinking.” The record thus written was then subjected to theoretical analysis.

Certain technical terms that play an important rôle in modern psychology of thinking (and willing) may now be explained.

## 62 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

not always present in its conscious state. It is so present only in the beginning and, later on, perhaps occasionally. But it acts in its unconscious form without interruption. Rather often, indeed, there are tendencies at work which never become conscious during their acting, or perhaps only at the end. These dynamic psychical agents, then, are pure theoretical entities that do not rest on any immediately conscious foundation at all. They have been called *latent directing potencies* (*Latente Einstellung*—Koffka).

These latent directing potencies play a big rôle in daily psychical life. Almost always we are “under” a sort of task or endeavor which we do not consciously know ourselves, but which penetrates the whole conscious life by its directing force.

The determining tendencies in the narrower sense of the term, namely, those directing potencies which, though unconscious as dynamic factors, still have their conscious representation occasionally, are, of course, much more appropriate for analytical and experimental investigation than are those potencies which, as regards

their conscious state, remain latent forever. But psychological theory is entitled to introduce them also by analogy.

### C. *On So-called Reproduction*

We now leave the limiting and directing psychical aspects for a while, with the intention of coming back to them from another point of view later on. For it seems necessary, before we proceed, to discuss a certain problem which might very well have been dealt with in an earlier chapter, but which in any case must be discussed now.

Let us begin by introducing a new term: *reproduction*,—well known from psychological text-books.

Reproduction means the process of transformation of a psychical content from the unconscious into the conscious state. Reproduction, then, is in the service of association first of all, and, since association, or at least, associative affinity, is a—not *the*—foundation of all psychical processes, reproduction is fundamental, at least as far as the conscious side of psychical life is concerned.

## 64 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

What then does reproduction mean? Does not the word suggest that there exist "in" the unconscious *X* a great number of unconscious quasi-*things*, in the form of fixed and definite *somethings*, and that these quasi-*things* have two modi of existence, an unconscious and a conscious one? In this case alone would the word *re-production* be a proper name for the matter in question.

But at once a difficulty appears. For there is the faculty of so-called *phantasy*. The mermaid and the centaur are some of its results, the one a human woman with a fish's tail, the other a horse with a man's head. These came into psychical life one day for the first time. They certainly were not *re-produced* as such. They were not quasi-*things*, but have been made quasi-*things* by unconscious agents which are at work in phantastic imagination. But this woman-*and*-fish, horse-*and*-man, as psychical possessions, cannot have been "fixed and definite" quasi-*things*, but must have been dissolvable things. What, then, are fixed and definite things?

And another difficulty here appears, much more severe and grave than the first one. It has

to do with memory images in their relation to the originals, which first came "through the senses," a phrase we may be allowed to use here in its popular meaning.

The memory images are by no means "fixed and definite" copies of the originals, but differ from them in two respects. Firstly, they almost always are nothing but fragments of the originals, for they always lack certain details that the originals have. Secondly, they are always damaged or corrupted "copies." For example, let me ask you to try to imagine the head of a friend or a mountain range you know very well. Make a sketch of these from your imagination. You will always find, when looking at the real friend or the real mountains again, that your sketch is wrong. What you have drawn is not complete, and, what is more important, not quite correct. The strange thing, however, is that your sketch, though incomplete and incorrect, is yet a whole, and a whole of a highly individualized character. You have imagined your friend in a definite color and situation, say, half from the left, and on a specifically colored background.

## 66 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

What, then, remains of the quasi-psychical things, fixed and definite, which are said to be *re-produced*, i.e., merely transformed from the unconscious into the conscious state? Almost nothing, it seems to me.

There is no *re-production*; there is *production* out of material which is able to accept any new form or combination of its elements.

And now, to all that we have here discussed, must be added the point mentioned in a previous chapter, that any content that is *re-produced* (as text-books used to say) even the second time, bears on itself the accent of *having been already consciously possessed*, and differs by this very accent from its first conscious existence.

*Quasi-things*, therefore, in psychical life, if we wish to use this expression at all, may be called the elemental materials we have studied in the beginning, but absolutely nothing else.

What, then, is association on such a foundation? Nothing but a rather rough method of classification of certain comparatively simple production phenomena. There are *no* fixed and definite psychical things with fixed associative affinities. But the acting, psychical, dynamic

principle operates occasionally, in the simplest cases of its so acting, in such a way that it is *as if there were* such things. The use of the word "association" is only a rather loose way of describing what happens. For there are neither fixed things, nor fixed affinities, nor any real *re-production*.

After this fundamental discovery, which, though it might have been explained earlier, here stands in its proper place, it seems to me, we may return to the analysis of the "determining tendency" or the "standing under a task."

What is to follow will lead us to the final concept of normal dynamic causal psychology, as far as inner psychical life is concerned.

#### D. *The Concept of My Soul*

*Tasks* to be solved may be of three different forms:

Firstly, you may have an anticipated schema already filled with content with the exception of but one place. This is the case when you try to remember, for example, the name of some particular king.

Secondly, you may have an anticipated schema

## 68 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

which is quite empty and is to be filled with content on the foundation of a certain given system of relations. This is the case if you try to "solve" a mathematical equation.

The expression, *completing a complex*, (*Komplexerganzung*—Selz) has been used. The unconscious directing tendency acts, with the result of completing a complex which had been partly or almost wholly incomplete. But we are by no means thinking here of a so-called association between whole and part, as discussed above (page 53). For we are no longer picturing, as "fixed and definite" psychical things merely to be *re*-produced, either the complete complex, or the incomplete complex, or the material to be put into the complex, or the system of relations. *Completing a complex* to us is now merely a descriptive term denoting a special way in which psychical dynamic factors very often act.

Thirdly, there are cases in psychical life where anticipated schemata are not only to be filled with content, partly or completely, but *where there are no such schemata*, where, therefore, the schemata themselves have to be *found*. This form of "solution" is at the same time the very thing

that renders our psychical life valuable in respect to cultural progress. All "invention," in the broadest meaning of the word, scientific, theoretical, ethical, religious, artistic, technical, rests upon it. Here the concept of a determining tendency at work in the sphere of the unconscious seems to fail. Actually, however, it does not fail, as we see if only we look closely.

In order to understand this, let us go back to the foundations of philosophy and begin with some questions of mere terminology. We shall not, by the way, be very "modern" in this paragraph.

We shall, first, give a name to the unconscious *X* in which all the phenomena we have studied are happening. We call this *X* by its old name *soul* or *mind*, or, rather, *my soul* or *mind*. For psychology, so far, has been concerned only with what *I have* or *have had*, and therefore *soul* exists only in relation to "I" in its solipsistic sense,—for this part of the discussion at least.

We may say that *my soul* is the unconscious foundation of my *consciously having* in its totality and temporal sequence. In *my soul* there is continuous becoming, subject to certain forms

## 70 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

of causality, while *I*, as we know, *have consciously* in a discontinuous form that is comparable to the sparking of an electric machine (page 46).

But, in this part of the book at least, we are not considering *my soul*, as an absolute or metaphysical reality. *My soul* is a concept of order, which *means* a certain realm or sphere of existence, *as if* it were independent, i.e., *as if* it were merely "Ego-possessed" in its being. But only *as if*. My soul as a concept remains *my concept*, my *immediate object*, but it is of the class of immediate objects which "mean" mediate ones, just as do all concepts that relate to what is called nature, or empirical, quasi-independent reality in space (and with relation to space), and as does the concept of *nature* itself.

Thus, then, I posit<sup>18</sup> the concept of *my soul*, since I know by intuition that in this way there will be order in the totality of all *my having consciously* in the course of time. I intuitively "see"<sup>19</sup> the form of order, *my soul*, as an unconscious something endowed with becoming and

<sup>18</sup> In German: *Ich setze.*

<sup>19</sup> In German: *Ich schaue.*

with special forms of causality; as penetrating, so to speak, the totality of my *consciously having*, past, present and future, and as uniting it into one great unity, but only *as if* it existed independently of my "having" it.

I speak of *soul* or *mind*, therefore, without hesitation, hoping that the reader will not overlook my critical reserve as to this concept. But I do not speak of "my consciousness" or "the consciousness," nor have I used in this book the customary phrase, "content of my consciousness." "My consciousness" would be a very misleading expression for the matter in question here, since the main point of our former discussion was to show that there is *no* becoming, no causality, no doing, no temporal continuity on the conscious side of psychical life. We need something unconscious to explain dynamically the sequence of conscious phenomena, and, of course, we should *not* call this "the consciousness."

But the term "the consciousness" as a substantive is misleading even in respect to *my conscious having* as such. It suggests a thing, and "I" is not even a quasi-thing. And certainly there is nothing like a conscious pot or cup "in" which

## 72 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

there is something. With regard to the words *mind* or *soul*, it is likewise not quite correct to use the word "in," but the object denoted by them may at least be considered by analogy with something "in" which there is something else in the original sense of the word.

"The consciousness," then, is a bad term for the indefinable and irreducible *I*. Our primordial fact (page 1), *I consciously have something*, must here take the place of "the consciousness."<sup>20</sup> But let us go back to the problem of psychical causality, and discuss the questions which still remain to be solved, on the foundation of our new concept *my soul*.

We have asked the question (page 61) : What about "determining tendencies," or the completings of complexes, when there is *no* anticipated schema waiting to be filled with content, either partly or completely? Here, in order to find a solution, we must go back to the very beginning of all philosophy. And a solution *must* be found, for otherwise our dynamic psychology would remain very incomplete.

<sup>20</sup> "The consciousness" is a quite impossible word for the *soul* or *mind*, which is most decidedly unconscious.

We remember that, at the very beginning of all philosophy, there is only the primordial fact: *I consciously have something* (page 1). But this primordial fact is not quite sufficient to support the whole grand edifice of philosophy. An addition not only must be given to it, but can be given: the something which *I consciously have* is *ordered*. *I consciously have a something in order*, the concept of order being itself inexplicable and indefinable, yet "clear and abstract," to use the phrase of Descartes, by immediate intuition of its meaning.

We now turn from this primordial fact and from "phenomenology" to psychology.

*My soul* is the unconscious foundation of my *consciously having*; thus it is "posited" in the service of order. My primordial knowing of the meaning of *order* and my primordial willing of order with regard to all possible contents therefore indicates to the Ego a certain primordial state and dynamics of my soul; my soul also is in the possession of order and can *make* order, for it has faculties of *making* and *doing*, called "*willing*" and "*thinking*" in the sense of activities, which the Ego does not possess.

## 74 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

I may now apply some of our psychological results:

It is as if I were always standing “under the task” of finding *complete order*, and as if my soul were “solving” this task. “I” (and my soul) is *by its very essence* “under” this *primordial* task; it is in primordial and inexplicable possession of the primordial “anticipated schema” *order*, and the soul works according to it. “Everything that is consciously possessed must be looked upon as being in definite order”—this, then, is the primordial task.

And now, “under” this primordial task, special and definite anticipated schemata arise before me. They constitute the special determinated tendencies of which ordinary psychology speaks, and “under” which the soul is working (and *I* am consciously having), in science and in everyday life.

The first *invention* of all schemata, or, to put it differently, the *first intuition of problems*, arises out of the very primordial essence of Ego and soul. On the foundation of its primordial anticipated schema, *order*, the soul is establishing special and particular schemata and gives

them over to its particular dynamics for working. And, in correspondence to this, I have primordially by intuition the concept of order, secondarily, special problems of order, and tertiary, the solution of these problems, i.e., the filling out of the problems or mere empty schemata with special contents. From this point of view all concepts of ordinary psychology, such as production, association, limiting factors, directing factors or tendencies, and so on, become concepts of only secondary and, I might say, preliminary value.

There is only one concept in normal psychology which is quite final: *My ordered and ordering unconscious soul.*

Now, let us try to tell still a little more about the soul.

The soul must be regarded as a dynamic system endowed with a particular organization which corresponds to my possessing the primordial logical meanings or "categories" and the relations which are valid in their sphere.

We, of course, are able to discover this dynamic organization only on the foundation of the logical structure of our conscious contents,

## 76 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

which is static. For we cannot investigate the *soul* as we investigate the anatomy of an animal.

Therefore everything in this field requires investigation by inference and analogy. And, furthermore, everything remains very far from satisfactory. For our mental organization, unfortunately, is such that it is able to approach the details of a given manifoldness only if this manifoldness is a manifoldness in space. But the soul and its organization is *not* "spatial." Strange to say, therefore, the Ego cannot investigate in full detail its own substructure! The Ego-part of the mind cannot really approach the full mind.

Another problem comes upon the scene: May not the organized soul have its *evolution* or quasi-embryonic development? Certainly it may. But so little is satisfactorily known about this, that we shall omit this topic from our discussions, the greatest difficulty being the question whether part—or even all—of the "embryology" of mind may not be embryology of the brain at bottom. But this can be fully understood only later on.

What, now, about the *causality* of the soul,

or, in particular, about the causal nature of any particular determining, directing tendency?

Is such a tendency a causal agent or factor at all? If we call *causal* anything that determines the quality of an event by its own quality, it certainly is. But it does not stand in analogy to mechanical causality. Mechanical causality, as I have shown elsewhere, is causality between singularities, such as atoms; association in its crudest form stands in analogy to such causality. Mechanical causality is not causality as such, but corresponds only to one of four *a priori* forms of causality,<sup>21</sup> one of them being *individualising* or *whole-making* causality, realized, according to my system of vitalistic biology, in the organic world.

It is, to this schema of *whole-making causality*, then, that the causality of and "in" the soul may be said to correspond. But for the very same reason that the word "in" is here used, namely, that there is no better word, we are also unable to make out this correspondence in detail. Mental causality *shares* this disadvantage with any empirical illustration of individualizing

<sup>21</sup> See my *Ordnungslehre*, 2nd edit., 1923, pp. 197

## 78 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

causality. For, we may repeat, our mental organization is restricted, being able to get at final details only where there is spatial manifoldness and, therefore, strange to say, not with regard to itself.

Finally: Is the soul “conscious”? We have called it unconscious, so far. But this may only mean that it is not *I*, i.e., that it is not what I mean by the word “I.” Does it possess another *I*, i.e., an Ego, that would, then be a real *alter Ego* with respect to the *I* proper?

We merely raise the question in this paragraph; for we do not yet know what the “other *I*,” the *alter Ego*, means. In fact, it means nothing to us, so far, since our whole philosophy and psychology has up to this point been “solipsistic.”

Later on we shall return to this big and curious problem. Thus far it has sufficed to regard the soul as a mediate or empirical *object* which is the “unconscious” foundation of the Ego that *has consciously*, and to regard the *concept* of “my soul” as a concept of order. “Object” and “concept meaning an object” must, of course, be distinguished here in the same way as, for

example, in dealing with the problem of "God."

So much, then, about the dynamics of inner psychical life. We shall now enter quite a new field of analytical research, a field that will require a number of quite new concepts. It is here that we shall turn to those problems which the text-books of psychology used to rank first, namely, problems concerning sensation, perception, moving power, and so on.

But the very first thing we have to do will be to introduce a certain concept which, strange to say, is best known in a popular way and is, at the same time, very difficult to deal with in a critical and analytical manner: the concept of *my body*.

#### 4. SUMMARY

Before we begin our new analysis, however, let me sum up those three characteristics of modern psychology which constitute its very essence, and at the same time mark the great difference that modern psychology shows in relation to all earlier psychological doctrines that claimed to be scientific and of general validity.

The four chief characteristics are as follows:

## 80 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

- I. The *inactivity* of the conscious Ego.
- II. Forms of *meaning* as being already present among the *elements* of psychical conscious objects.
- III. *Directing* agents in the service of *order* as the main factors in psychical, *unconscious*, dynamics.
- IV. The critical foundation of all and the starting point of the discussion, the *pri-mordial fact*: "I consciously have something."

Of these four topics the first and the fourth are my own theoretical property, while the second and the third are the results of researches of a very different kind, in part logical, in part psychological, as explained in the beginning. The psychologists, Külpe, Marbe, Messer, Bühler, Ach, Koffka and Selz share the greatest honors in this field.

The systematics, i.e., the logical arrangement of the whole matter discussed so far, is, however, my own work. But I believe that not many of those who stand on the ground of "modern psychology" at all would reject the arrangement followed.

In the beginning of this book I spoke of the strange situation that, before about 1900, there should have been "two psychologies," the one scientific and universal, but incomplete, the other complete, but only the expression of the personal belief of this or that philosopher.

This impossible state of affairs has now been changed: We now *have*, at least, a psychology of inner life which is scientific, universal and complete at the same time. Our psychology is capable of explaining what is to be explained, i.e., our psychology realizes in full the scheme of order present in the totality of psychical facts. It is not forced to leave aside the main points, namely, meaning, and progress with regard to meaning, as was, strange to say, the older psychology.

Contents which have a meaning can never arise from elements which are meaningless, and enrichment in meaning cannot exist without dynamic agents directed towards it. This is the very point where the older psychology was insufficient. Modern psychology has filled the gap. The situation is, in fact, very similar to the one

## 82 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

in biology: individuality can never arise from elements which are neutral with regard to it, and cannot be realized without individualizing dynamic agents.

Let us finally mention a very important consequence connected with modern psychology.

History and sociology, both taken in the widest sense of the words, are to a great extent, perhaps even completely, applied psychology. There may be features of super-personal wholeness and evolution in them that would not be explicable on, so to speak, a personal-psychological foundation. We do not know much about that, though we know that in any case a good number of such psychological facts, in the personal sense, are connected with both those sciences.

History and sociology, then, need psychology. But, of course, they need only a psychology of which they can really make use. Now the older psychology, with its very primitive theory of materials, and its unsatisfactory association theory, could not be used or "applied" by those sciences at all. Historians and sociologists,

therefore, did not care much for psychology, indeed they very often had a decidedly hostile attitude toward it. And they were right.

But now we have a new psychology, which not only may be applied, but must be applied. This means that the modern psychologist not only offers to the historian and sociologist a sound psychology, but also that he is entitled to demand that those scientists should really "apply" his psychology, and not put it aside as they have been doing heretofore. The modern psychologist may even dare to say that the work of the historian and sociologist may be helped enormously by such an application.

We shall learn, later on, that there is still another branch of modern psychology which is to be of great importance for history and the sciences connected with it. I am thinking of the psychology of what is generally called the subconscious. But it is certainly well to realize that "normal" psychology, pure and simple, has already changed its aspect to such an extent that it is not only able to serve but also entitled to demand that it be used.

*Meaning or significance and enrichment in*

## 84 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

*significance* is almost everything in psychical life, in any case they are its most important characteristics. And modern normal psychology takes account of both. With regard to significance as such, modern psychology even tells us that psychical life *is* life in significance; for “consciously to have” *is* to have significances in *every* case.

## II. PSYCHOPHYSICS

### 1. MY BODY

BODIES are parts of what we call nature. The concept of *nature* is a concept of *order*. By it, as my immediate possession, I “mean” a community of quasi-independent things and relations among things. A single constituent or part of nature, as, for instance, my work-table, is also “meant” in its quasi-independency as a *mediate* or empirical object. That by which it is “meant” is an *immediate* object, i.e., a *something* that is immediately had or possessed consciously, say the perceptive image or memory image of my work-table, or even merely the “thinking” of it. “Meaning” as an accent of certain psychical contents, then, belongs to the class of immediate objects; that which is “meant” is the mediate or empirical object. I “have” the mediate or empirical objects only in so far as I have immediate *somethings* possessing a *meaning*—accents in themselves. Meaning-accents, of course, are the same thing as what

## 86 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

we have called in a previous chapter (page 21) accents of the sphere of existence.

But this discussion is only incidental. It merely serves as a short logical introduction into the realm of nature.

Bodies in nature are of greatly varied kinds. There are inorganic bodies and organic or living ones, both of them existing in many individuals which may be classified into species, genera, families, etc.

There is one single body, however, among the enormous number of bodies, which has quite a unique and exceptional position. It is an organic or living body; it even belongs to a well known group of these bodies, the human bodies, which, on their part, belong to the Primates, the Mammals, the Vertebrates. But in spite of this, the body in question is something else to me than all other bodies are. I am speaking of *my body*.

That which makes *my body* different from all other bodies is the immediate sensible data by which it is indicated to me. These data are in one respect poorer, but in almost every other respect much richer, than the immediate data on the basis of which I speak of a "body" as a special

constituent of nature in general, even of an organic, nay, even of a *human* body.

In the optical sphere the data which relate to *my* body are poorer than with regard to others, for *I* cannot "see" certain parts of my body, my ears and, in particular, my eyes, for instance, unless I use a certain apparatus called a mirror. In the motor or kinesthetic sphere the data are richer with regard to my body than with regard to others. In untechnical language, other bodies may be "touched" and give me a particular sensation or, in our technical language, *pure suchness* (page 12), in this case. But my body gives me sensations or *suchness* of particular kinds in correspondence with its various states: pain sensations, and sensations of being touched, each endowed with a special sign of localization (page 13), also visual sensations, and, finally, sensations with regard to the movement of the limbs.

In the strict terms of logic the situation is a somewhat different one, if not actually the reverse: There are very many *somethings* which I *consciously have*, all of the forms of *pure suchnesses* of greatly varied types, all in particular

## 88 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

relations to one another. The total community of all this, including also faculties or "possibilities," is such that I see by intuition that it would give me a good instance of *order*, if I should posit a special concept on its foundation. I therefore posit the concept of order, *my body*, i.e., an immediate object of the class of thoughts which has the accent of *meaning* "my body" as a constituent of empirical nature.

All this is rather complicated and the reader may ask what these logical subtleties have to do with a discussion of psychological problems. But I answer, without hesitation, that we have founded our psychology from the very beginning, not popularly, but philosophically, and, in particular, logically, and that, for this reason, it would disturb the unity of the whole, if now, merely for the sake of convenience, we should speak of my body in the common and naive-realistic way, as of a thing that is self-evident.

By no means is the existence of "my body" a self-evident matter, so little so that, on the contrary, one might well say that *there is nothing so strange as the fact that "I" am bound to*

*my body forever, during my life,* and can never get rid of it—except in sleep.

And this, as we all know, is also one of the particular characteristics of my body in comparison with other bodies which we are able, when we do not care for them, to exclude from what we *have*,—by shutting our eyes, for example.

Not much critical insight is required to avoid confusing the meaning of the word *Ego* and *my body*; only a very unphilosophical mind would be likely to confuse the two. But, it seems to me, there are many persons who do not fully realize that *my body* is in fact my *object*, and that it is a *something* that is *consciously had* by "I" in the form of "being meant" in just the same logical sense as any other body is meant, and differing from other bodies only insofar as the number and quality of the immediate data which form the foundation of the concept *my body* are different from the number and quality of data underlying the concept *body in nature* in general. It is, in particular, the so-called kinesthetic data, including the local accents of Lotze (page

13), that play the important part in the logical construction of empirical reality here, and *exclusively* here.

## 2. THE FUNCTIONAL RELATION BETWEEN BODY AND MIND

We now return to problems of psychology.

In the part of this book immediately preceding we have studied what we called the inner psychical life, and have been able to discover at least the most general causal laws which are responsible for its order, these laws being centered finally in the one and single concept, *my whole and whole-making soul*.

My inner psychical life *qua* inner life is now found to have points where it breaks up, where there does not exist any longer a continuity of content in it, where something alien, as it were, seems to invade it.

Everyday philosophy regards this problem very superficially, and does not see that there is any special difficulty in understanding the fact: I have *sensation* or a group of sensations, a perception, whenever there is any breaking, as it were, of my inner life. Nature comes into contact

with my mind; nature "acts" upon it. And this happens through the sense organs of my body.

All this, however, is far from being as easy and "self-evident" as it may seem to be to one who is unaccustomed to a philosophical way of thinking. On the contrary, some of the greatest difficulties of all philosophy are met with at this point.

What is actually true about the "acting of nature upon my mind by the sense organs of my body," is the following:

There appear before consciousness many contents which are certainly not explained on the basis of either the acting of my whole, and whole-making, soul in general or the directing activity of a "determining tendency" in particular, as, for instance, when I "see" a flash or hear a motor car passing my house. I know by experience that whenever such a content appears, something always happens in a sense organ, a nerve, and a part of the brain as well. Or more strictly put, I know that in this case I *might immediately have* a certain something which I refer, by the function of "meaning," to the parts of the mediate or empirical objects just named.

## 92 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

For surely I can imagine that I *might* "see" the changes which occur in my eye or ear, my optic or acoustic nerve, my optic or acoustic brain sphere, at the time that corresponds to my seeing a flash or hearing a motor car.

There certainly is a *functional* dependence, in any case, between my consciously having a certain complex of *pure suchnesses* and the quasi-independent happening in certain parts of my body, the word "functional" being taken in the neutral, mathematical sense of the word, which is beyond the concept of "causal" dependence and stands on quite an indifferent level. In a merely provisional way we therefore may say, roughly, that it certainly is *as if* nature were acting upon my mind, leaving open the question whether such an "acting" really does happen. Psychophysics is the science which tries to investigate all such functional dependences, and all details connected therewith.

Here we should pause for a moment to note the difference between our conception of psychophysics and that of the ordinary text-books in psychology.

Most text-books in psychology, though not all, stand on a “naïve-realistic” platform. They regard “my body” as an accepted, self-evident fact; they take it as “existing” without asking what that means. They then generally begin with the genesis of “sensations” in the psycho-physical sense, regarding this as the introductory chapter to psychology. You will have observed, however, that we have proceeded in just the reverse order. For the change in time of *my having something consciously* has been the starting point of our psychology, leading ultimately to the concept of *my soul*, “whole and whole-making” in a dynamic way. We introduce psychophysics only because we are forced to do so by certain facts, namely, the impossibility of explaining the appearance of *all* conscious contents on the foundation of the concept of *my soul* with its inner dynamics.

The conditions in modern psychology are similar to those which prevail in modern logic. Traditional logic began with “things” and went on to “concepts,” while modern logic begins with “significances” and proceeds to “things.”

## 94 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

The older psychology began with sensations coming from the action of things, while modern psychology begins with my having all sorts of contents including significances, and then proceeds, because it is compelled to do so in the service of order, to create the strange object, "my body," and to posit the concept of *sensation* in a rather complicated way.

### 3. SOME PARTICULAR PROBLEMS OF PSYCHOPHYSICS

We now come to the psychophysical part of psychology, which used to be treated in the text-books at considerable length. We shall only mention the problems that are especially concerned here, adding here and there a few critical remarks. The text-books offer sufficient evidence in these cases and may be recommended to the reader without hesitation in this respect, if only he does not forget the naïve-realistic basis of those books, which is harmless in case it is thoroughly understood as the abbreviation of a rather complex relation of logical conditions present.

Let us then mention a few of the most important problems.

#### A. *Weber's Law*

What is the relation of an increase of the intensity of a physical stimulus to the increase of the intensity of the corresponding sensation?

The answer is, as we know, this: While the stimulus increases in a geometrical progression—(1, 4, 9, 16 . . .)—the intensity of the sensation increases arithmetically—(1, 2, 3, 4 . . .).

The law does not hold for very weak and very strong stimuli. And there are certain difficulties. Firstly, there is the question whether sensations, i.e., pure "suchnesses" consciously had, have any "intensity" at all. Bergson denies that they have, and regards every so-called intensity of a given quality, say, a specific red or the musical tone *do*, as a particular quality which is specific in itself. But it is my opinion that we may speak of *the same "do"* in various intensities. It is difficult, secondly, to determine what is to be regarded as the unity, as the "one more" in the scale of intensities in the realm of a given sensa-

## 96 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

tion quality. The power of exact measurement is certainly not given to us, and so far Bergson is right. What we are able to regard as "just more" in correspondence to various stimuli is generally considered as unity; but the problem is whether the "just more" is always the same "more" in the scale. And the concept of the so-called *Schwelle* or threshold is also not without its complications.

### B. *Johannes Müller's Law of "Specific Sense Energy"*

The term "energy" is, of course, misleading; what is meant is potency or faculty.

According to Müller each sense-nerve or even each fiber of each sense-nerve answers to a stimulation with a fixed sensation, quite regardless of the kind of stimulation, whether "normal" (adequate) or "abnormal" (inadequate). This given and innate specificity of the fiber is later on projected, so to speak, to the brain. The system of brain cells is here regarded as being absolutely fixed in its single parts with regard to the faculty of promoting sensations.

This theory is no longer held to be absolutely

true, at least as regards the single fibers or single brain cells. There seem to be important differences in the process of nerve irritation itself, the same fiber being able to carry various stimulations, the same brain cell to give various sensations according to the way in which it is stimulated. This certainly holds in the range of one sense sphere, but perhaps the whole brain is "equipotential," in the new-born child and is *made* different only in the way of functional adaptation.<sup>1</sup>

But whatever may be the case, there *remains a certain truth* in Müller's law, though a truth rather different from what Müller himself regarded as true, and that is the following:

Whether Müller's law be right, or whether it be partly or completely wrong, in *any* case it is a logical postulate, resting upon the principle of universal determination that *any final definite state in the brain as a material system corresponds to a definite sensation as a conscious content.*

The "clepistic" final state in the brain is,

<sup>1</sup> See my *Philosophie des Organischen*, 2nd edit., 1921, pp. 366 ff.

## 98 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

in modern terms, a certain definite arrangement and motion in a community of electrons. Whether, then, this state be the effect of a given potency being merely *awakened* by any kind of stimulus at all, as Müller supposed, or whether it be *made* what it is by a stimulation with specific qualities, in any case this state as a definite *status* corresponds to *some* certain and definite sensation and to nothing else. This is the psycho-physical postulate of the theory of sensations.

C. *Sensations with a Spatial Characteristic*  
Spatiality as such belongs, as we have found (page 14), to the material elements of what is consciously possessed and, therefore, cannot be dissolved or explained in any way. To this extent so-called "nativism" is true.

The local accents in the sphere of the sense of touch are "innate," and so are all optical data with their accents "outside" and "long and wide," and all kinesthetic data with their "three dimensions."

But so-called empiricism with regard to spatial experiences is also true in a certain respect, namely, with regard to details in the sphere of

distance, besides accommodation, need not be mentioned here. Painters know a good deal about such means—for example, that remote objects have a certain blue color, *as we know from experience.*

#### D. *Action*

The opposite of sensation is *action*. My body, while receptive in sensation, is also active. The one is the reverse of the other. Roughly speaking, there is, in sensation, the sequence: stimulus; irritation of sense organ, sense nerve, center; affection of mind, i.e., sensation; in action the sequence: "will"; affection of brain center, motor-nerve, muscle.

Again we should be careful to take this statement only for what it is, namely, an abbreviation of a complex of relations. In any case there exists a functional dependence between my willing something and a certain state or event, practically almost hypothetical, in a certain part of the brain of my body. When this is given, everything else is left to itself.

The psychophysical postulate (page 98) in

this case compels us to consider as univocal the relation between "will to do *this*" and "existence of *this* condition in the brain." Thus the corresponding reverse of what happened in sensation is realized.

But there are some complications, which, at least at first glance, render the comparison between sensation and action a somewhat more difficult and complicated subject than sensation was.

In the field of sensations I come into possession of a fixed and definite content, say red, as soon as a fixed and definite part of my body's brain has come into a certain condition, be it according to Johannes Müller's law or in a different way. But *what* do I will? To write a letter, for example, but *not* to move this muscle of my hand, nor to cause the innervation of a motor nerve or the irritation of a certain locality of the brain. I do not even know anything about those things unless I am a physiologist.

We, therefore, must change to a certain extent our whole conception of what happens in psychophysical life in order to discover a simi-

## 102 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

larity between sensation and action—a reversed similarity, of course—and in order to bring the psychophysical problem of action to a solution at all.

Let us, then, say in the first place with regard to sensation that it is not the “I have consciously red” that is the main point on the psychical side, but a certain state or condition of *my* (unconscious) *soul* of which “my” conscious content is a mere index. It is the state of *my soul* that ultimately stands in functional univocal correspondence with a certain state of my brain. And in volition it is again a certain state of *my soul*, of which my “willing something” is but an index, that is in functional correspondence with a certain state in my brain,—in the motor sphere this time.

Thus the difficulties seem to disappear, including a difficulty with regard to sensation which we have not mentioned so far, namely, the fact that I see, say, a red flower outside in space, but do not see my optic brain center in a state of irritation. To this topic we shall return.

There is, then, a double pair of functional

correspondences, strictly speaking: The one between state of brain and state of soul, the other between state of soul and conscious contents. This holds for both sensation and volition. To connect the conscious contents immediately with states of the brain leads to difficulties, especially in the realm of volitions.

Once more I lay great stress upon the point that, so far, we have spoken only of *functional correspondence* or dependence between psychical and physical states, but not of "causality." The problem as to whether causality exists between the physical and the psychical side of empirical reality or not, and what the relation between the two might be, if there is no causality, will be discussed later.

It has been our purpose to show that what we have called the *psychophysical postulate* can be made clear in the field of volition as well as of sensations. And this purpose has been fulfilled, it seems to me, at least in the most general outlines.

So much concerning problems peculiar to psychophysics. Only a few of these problems

## 104 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

have, however, been mentioned. There has been omitted, for example, the question, much discussed nowadays, whether complex external stimuli act upon the psychophysical entity as the mere *sum* of their parts, or as *wholes*. This question, which is very important, will be properly explained later in connection with a much wider problem. And there are many other problems that we have omitted intentionally.

We might now proceed to the famous "mind-and-body" problem in general, i.e., to the question whether, to put it in the usual form, there exists a "psychophysical parallelism" or a "psychophysical interaction," were it not that a certain very fundamental concept, and at the same time a very popular one, has so far not been used by us and has been mentioned only incidentally without going into details. That is the concept of the *other Ego*.

As the establishment of this fundamental concept will make the following explanations much more simple and less artificial, so to speak, we now interrupt the treatment of psychophysics for a while, promising meanwhile to return to the subject on a broader basis.

#### 4. THE "OTHER EGO"

That *I* am not the only conscious subject, but that there are many such subjects, not alone other human beings but also many animals, is regarded as a commonplace by almost all people; and among those who regard the existence of other Egos as self-evident are many scientists, even psychologists. It does not necessarily do any harm to their work if the latter do so look upon the matter in question. The psychologist needs as little to be critical, as does the physicist or chemist or biologist. But no scientist can claim to stand on a philosophical platform if he avoids criticism.

Our aims in psychology are, however, decidedly philosophical. We are therefore not allowed to speak of "self-evidence" here. On the contrary, we are faced by a problem, and, indeed, by a very important one.

But we are not yet concerned with metaphysical problems in this part of the book. When we ask whether we are entitled or not to speak of the *existence* of other Egos, we understand the word "existence" in the empirical sense, i.e., in the sense of the pure theory of order.

## 106 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

Are there, in the empirical sense of *being*, "subjects" among our "objects"? That is the question.

It used to be the custom to deal with this question on the basis of analogy, and the whole problem, until lately, appeared to be a comparatively simple one. It was argued:

Here is my body in connection with, no matter what the nature of that connection may be, my soul and my *conscious having*. There is another body, very similar in form and behavior to my own. *Therefore* there is also a soul and a *conscious having* in connection with it. Or, briefly: My body is to my soul and "having" as your body is to yours:  $b_1:s_1 = b_2:x$ .

This rather primitive way of putting the matter takes it for granted that, with regard to "the other" we are able to know *immediately* something about his body and its behavior and about nothing else. This, in fact, seems a sound position to take as long as we are occupying the position of the man of pure science. And yet the problem is possibly not so simple.

Theodor Lipps was the first to see difficulties in the way.

The assumed relation: My body: my soul and my "having" = your body: your soul and your "having" is, he says, by no means correct. For "your soul" and "your having" is not in any way a clear concept. In any case its *conceiving* requires a particular faculty of myself, which Lipps calls *Einfühlung*, a term used rather often in esthetics. We may translate it by *introfeeling*. I project *myself* into the alien body and then denominate by the short word "you" the rather complex idea: "I could imagine being connected with that alien body. If my body would show such movements as the other does, I should possess such and such conscious contents."

But the word "introfeeling," it seems to me, does not carry us very far forward.

After Lipps, Scheler advanced the theory of the *immediate perception* of the "you." Not by the aid of our sense organs of course, but by a certain inner "sense" we possess, or, as he put it, the faculty of "perceiving" immediately the other Ego in its distinct singleness. Later on Scheler modified this theory, accepting only immediate aprioristic knowledge about what might be called mental or spiritual *otherness* in

## 108 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

general. Not the "you" in this special case is immediately perceived, he now said, but on the occasion of perceiving another organic body and its behavior we apply, so to speak, the aprioristic category of *mental you-ness*, and then say: "There is a you." This theory resembles very closely that of J. Volkelt, who speaks of an *original you-certainty* (*Ursprüngliche Du-Gewissheit*) which is, not explicitly, but implicitly, innate in the same sense in which all categories may be called innate.<sup>2</sup>

What, then, is our own opinion about the subject?

Certainly there are some kinds of original feelings that have what may be called and has been called a *cognitive* function. Moral feeling is the strongest and most important of these; for it certainly goes beyond the "I," and implicitly refers to the "other." Indeed, it is meaningless and senseless without this latent implication. It is, like instinct, directed, not towards a particular object, but towards a certain possible group of objects that have the form of mentality.

<sup>2</sup> Literature in my *Ordnungslehre*, 2nd edit., 1923, pp. 371 ff.

In this sense we might agree with Scheler's fiction of the "new Robinson," but in this sense only. Imagine a new Robinson, Scheler tells us, i.e., a human being, who from babyhood has lived alone on an island, deprived of all association with men and animals. Such a being would know that he forms part of a spiritual community without any experience, and, when he saw an organic being for the first time, he would call it at once a *you*. The transsubjective innate logical scheme would be filled with content.

I think this is true. But Scheler goes still further and tries to separate the category of "youness" from the category of morality. In order to see whether this is possible or not let us study the strange faculty of *understanding the expression of other faces* and the faculty of *imitation*. These faculties have by no means been studied to the extent they undoubtedly deserve.

It seems, in fact, as if the young human child, the real "baby," possesses the ability, firstly, to interpret the expression of the faces of other people with regard to the feelings they represent, and, secondly, to imitate in its own face what it has seen. Both abilities are quite wonder-

ful and not very easy to explain by ordinary methods.

The faculty of interpretation may be explained, however, in some such way as this: When the mother smiled the baby got something good; when she looked angry, it was, perhaps, beaten. But even this would not explain the introjection of a *feeling* into the mother.

But the faculty of imitation is not even "explainable" in part. The baby has seen other faces smiling but never his own; and yet it can imitate smiling, nay, quite specific movements of a face which it has seen, as, for instance, rolling out the tongue, and pouting the mouth. And even if it had *seen* its own face smiling or rolling the tongue or pouting the mouth, how can it know how all this is motorially performed?

There seems to be an innate faculty of reacting to stimuli of a certain definite form or rhythm by actions of the same form or rhythm, though the stimuli, of course, belong to the sense, the actions to the motor, field. This innate faculty of correspondence between mere forms and rhythms exists only in a most general and

schematic way, as a general impetus or quasi-instinct, we may say. As an example, think also of the strong impetus you feel to move your feet or fingers in a rhythmical way, whenever you hear music.

If now we turn back to the problem of "the other Ego" we may say that in the general faculty of imitation something is present that refers to *otherness* in general and, as far as the understanding of the other face's expression is concerned, to other psychophysical beings in particular.

We possess, it seems, a sort of dim instinctive knowledge of general "you-ness" in a primordial way, and it is on the foundation of this quasi-categorical aprioristic knowledge as well as on the foundation of analogy that we conclude that there are particular other Egos, connected with the bodies of other human beings and of animals; or, that there are *subjects* among our (empirical) *objects*.

The analogy theory is not wrong, but it is incomplete. It requires the general sphere of "spiritual otherness," a category of "region," as

Husserl might say, just as special geometrical forms require the general sphere of space, and as the specific "local accents" of our sensations of being touched all refer to the general sphere *my body's surface*.

So much, then, concerning what may be called the psychogenesis of the concept of the *other Ego*. Much is still in question, but it seems that we are on the way to a solution.

We now have to do with a rather different question, namely: What does the concept of "other Ego" mean *logically*, i.e., as a concept of order, which it certainly is. This problem of the logical and epistemological significance of a concept is very different from the psychogenetic one. The psychogenetic theory of a concept may be what it will, but the logical character of the concept as such, its meaning in the realm of a theory of order, is not thereby disclosed.

In order to find out the real logical or ordering essence of the concept *other Ego*, we must not forget that we have already established critically the two concepts of nature, or empirical reality in space (page 70), and of *my soul*

as the unconscious foundation of my *consciously having*. On the foundation of these concepts our present problem is not very difficult to solve.

Nature was found to be the community of those mediate distinct objects in space or in relation to space which are *meant* by immediate objects *as if* they (the mediate objects) were independent in their being and becoming. *My soul* was found not to contain very clearly single distinct objects; in any case we were unable to discover such objects in detail. But *my soul* as a whole was also a *something*, of an unconscious and non-spatial kind, of course, that was "meant" by immediate indexes *as if* it had being and becoming in itself. It is to be noted that the words "as if," as used here, exclude any sort of metaphysics.

We are now well prepared to tell what the concepts *other Ego* and *other mind* mean:

The organisms, in particular human beings and animals, are mediate or empirical objects of nature, regarded *as if* they were independent in their being and becoming, and *as if they were standing in mutual functional dependence with*

*a something that is like my soul and my Ego.* This is what is meant whenever the term “other” psychical being is used. The double *as if* is important.

We now have, in the sense explained, psychical *subjects* among our (empirical) objects. We must have these *subjects*, of course, for our dealings with history, sociology and even, in part, biology. After this we may therefore speak of *many souls*, and not only of *my soul*, as before. This will give to our whole discussion a greater freedom of expression. We may express ourselves at least *as if* the boundaries of pure solipsism were broken—although they are, of course, not broken in the real sense.

But before dealing with the nature of souls in general we have to pay our last tribute to psychophysics, which we have left facing its greatest problem: *Mind-and-body*.

What, then, shall we be able to say about the question implied to these words? Shall we be able to say anything more than that there is merely a “functional mutual dependence” between body and mind, the word functional again being taken in the neutral mathematical sense,

and not as suggesting the concept of causality?

### 5. MIND AND BODY

#### A. *The Theory of Psychomechanical Parallelism*

During the last few decades of the nineteenth century the official theory as to the relation between mind and body was the theory of so-called *psychophysical parallelism*. Recently this theory has been attacked from many different sides, to the extent that at the present day it has been almost universally given up.

The parallelistic theory of the relation between mind and body maintains that there is no state or event in the soul and, therefore, no conscious state either,<sup>3</sup> which is not accompanied by physicochemical or, in short, mechanical states or events in the brain, the latter being regarded as a true mechanical system. The term psychomechanical parallelism is preferable for what is really meant.

It should be stated, however, that there are varieties of parallelism: There are some psychol-

<sup>3</sup> Conscious "events" do not exist, as we know. I merely have consciously.

## 116 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

ogists who reject the concept of the unconscious-psychical and who hold the view that only psychical *states* of the conscious form have their parallels in states of the brain, there being no psychical *events*, as there is no "unconscious" psychical sphere. On this basis the continuity of the psychical breaks down completely; it is nothing but an addition, a rather luxurious one at that, to certain states of a given dynamic mechanism. The name Epiphenomenalism has been given to this theory. The main thing is the brain and the mechanical events in it; only here is there becoming and causality.

*Parapsychism* is another form of parallelism. In this variety the statement of ordinary parallelism is enlarged. Nothing on the psychical side without its mechanical parallel, but also nothing physical without psychical correspondence.

This specific theory generally forms part of a metaphysical system. But it must be stated, once for all, that by themselves all varieties of parallelism *may* be taken quite unmetaphysically—in other words, they are compatible with every epistemological standpoint and need not be taken metaphysically. We shall now try to

find out what may be called the roots or sources of psychomechanical parallelism, i.e., the reasons, historical as well as logical, that have led to its being a widely accepted theory.

Historically the philosophy of Spinoza is the father of parallelism. For Spinoza, as is well known, there exists one last substance with two "attributes," *extensio* and *cogitatio*. This substance is pictured as it were, equally well by the totality of the "modi" in the realm of each attribute. That means that the totality of all states and events in space and the totality of all psychical states and events illustrate the substance equally well and completely. In the last resort we have to do with "one and the same thing, expressed in two different manners."<sup>4</sup> For this reason, then, there is correspondence between the realms of the *Extended* and the *Thinking*, but not interaction.

We now come to the first of the logical sources of parallelism. It stands in close relation to the reasons which have made Spinozism its father. Only on the foundation of psychomechanical parallelism would a mechanical system be with-

<sup>4</sup> *Una eademque res, sed duobis modis expressa.*

## 118 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

out any gap ; and, on the other hand, Spinozism is the most complete and coherent metaphysical foundation of any theory of natural mechanism.

Certainly, the universe would appear most simple if we were able to regard nature in this way. But, certainly also, simplicity is not an absolute criterion of truth. We are only allowed to say : Let us accept mechanism, on the guiding principle of simplicity, *if we can*, but *if we cannot*, *then let us reject it*. Geometry also would be more simple if there were only two dimensions of space, but there *is* the third dimension.

There is, finally, another logical root of the parallelistic theory, i.e., another logical argument in favor of it. This has been acquired through analogy :

We have discussed the *psychophysical postulate* in the realm of sensation and volition. According to this postulate: However we conceive the function of nervous conduction and brain irritation, whether along the lines of Johannes Müller or in a different way, in any case there is, in sensation, a univocal relation between a certain distinct final material state in the brain and a definite sensation, and, in volition, between

a definite state of *my soul* (the index of which is my having a certain will) and a certain distinct first material state in a definite part of the so-called motor-spheres of the brain.

From these facts, resting on an *a priori* foundation, certain authors have drawn the conclusion that the same sort of univocal correspondence that exists between the final material brain state *and* sensation on the one hand, and between volition *and* first material state of the brain on the other hand, must be present with regard to *every something* which *I consciously have*, whether a feeling, a thought, or anything else. Also, the unconscious psychical processes that connect the conscious states are also believed to have their physical parallel in events inside the brain, the latter being considered a mechanical system.

Of course, the question of the possibility of various forms of the parallelistic theory here comes upon the scene again. In fact there are some who deny unconscious psychical becoming altogether, and who regard the conscious states both as epiphenomena to the mechanical cerebral states, and as lacking any real connection

## 120 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

*inter se.* But epiphenomenalism is not a necessary consequence of the hypothesis in question, which certainly may also be taken in the original Spinozistic sense.

Let us, then, analyze this important problem in greater detail. We ask: Is it possible to carry through the analogy in question? Is it really true that, on the foundation of the "postulate" of psychophysics, which, no doubt, holds good for sensation (or perception) and volition, every single conscious content of inner life has its "parallel" in a certain material state of the mechanical system called *my brain*?

It may be that by answering this question we shall also be able to solve the problem as to what sort the so-called "functional univocal mutual dependence" between mind and brain in sensation and volition may be, i.e., whether it must remain merely "functional" or acquire a more particular character.

We may put it this way: We believe that we are able to show that the analogy in question does *not* hold for the states of inner psychical life and that, besides, it is possible to put in the place of the word "functional" a more definite

expression, though not, perhaps, the much too simple phrase psychophysical "interaction."

We shall begin with simple and indefinite topics and shall proceed to complex and definite arguments against psychomechanical parallelism. Or, in other words, we shall begin with mere indicia and shall proceed to real proofs.

In the first place, then, we are discussing merely the *difficulties* of the usual "parallelism." It will soon appear that we have at hand the materials for a solution of our problem. We need merely use what we have learned before.

### B. Arguments and Proofs against Parallelism

#### i. Memory images and originals compared.

If psychomechanical parallelism were true, we ought to expect that there would be a strict correspondence, a sort of photographic identity, between memory images and their originals, i.e., perceptions. There might perhaps be certain gaps in the image, compared with the original, but nothing else. For, if the image is conditioned materially just as was the original, then the advocate of the mechanistic theory must assume that the image is dependent on the same material

## 122 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

state as the original, and that it owes its peculiarities in content to the same sort of material stimulation as the conscious original did, although the stimulation may be weaker. But we know from further discussions (page 65) that such an identity is by no means the case. There are not only gaps in the image, when compared with the original, but the original has been spoiled and distorted; it is an incorrect copy, and yet it is individual in itself.

From this fact we have drawn the conclusion that the unconscious *X* or, as we are now entitled to say, the *soul*, does not *re-produce*, but *produces*. We may now add to this statement that it is hardly possible to infer a mechanistic analogy for something which is production and not mere reproduction.

The parallelistic theory, in this case, might possibly be saved by additional hypotheses. In any case there is a difficulty, and we need not say more. For, on the basis of the theory, we ought to expect "photography," with certain gaps in the copy perhaps, and this does not exist.

ii. *The recognition of the same in various absolute expressions.*

Imagine any melody you know well, say the beginning of a movement of a symphony of Beethoven. The melody will be recognized as *the same* even if you hear it in a different key. A picture you know well will be recognized as *the same* if you see a small photograph of it. Two pictures, one in red and one in blue, are also *the same* picture.

Here we meet another great difficulty of parallelism as conceived mechanically, and at the same time we meet the problem of *individualized stimuli* or form-stimuli (*Gestaltreize-Ehrenfels*), which is much discussed nowadays, and which will occupy us at greater length later on.

According to parallelism the first hearing or seeing of the melody or the picture would impress the brain in a certain definite way, so as to make a definite *engramma* (Semon) upon it, and the process of recognition, of saying "the same," would depend on the stimulation of this very *engramma*. But the stimulus must engrave an-

*other engramma* into the brain, if it is offered the second time on a very different scale, be it musically or geometrically or with regard to color!

The difficulty becomes even greater if we call to mind the results of a fine experiment carried out by E. Becher. Becher arranged his experiment in the following way: He presents to the eye of a person a certain small figure, say, an arrow, in such a way that the irritation of the retina is clearly localized. Then, the second time, he presents the arrow again, but the person to whom it is shown is told to keep the eye firmly fixed, and arrangements are made so that this time another locality of the retina is stimulated. In spite of this the person says: This is the *same* arrow I saw before.

What about *engrammata* in this case? They are certainly in different localities. And yet the person says: "the same." But in this case also parallelism in its usual form *might* be saved by certain additional hypotheses and, therefore, we do not speak of proof, but merely of an "indication" against parallelism.

*iii. The insufficiency of the association theory.*

We know already that the theory of association is not sufficient to explain what really happens in inner psychic life (page 50). Mechanical parallelism could *only* use this theory to explain what happens along its psychical "parallel." Its physical "parallel" works mechanically, and the association theory is the only one in accordance with which the psychical side would, by analogy, work in the same way. This, of course, is perhaps even more than a mere "difficulty" for parallelism.

An argument rather often heard against parallelism is that on the basis of this theory life would be deprived of all charm and pleasure. It is asked: What about the "value" of history, art and ethics, if psychical life is only parallel to the action of a mechanical automaton? This, however, is an argument *ad hominem*, but not a scientific argument, and therefore we merely mention it.

Others say that consciousness becomes superfluous on the parallelistic basis. But perhaps it is a mere luxury. Who knows? The problem,

whether it is or not, must be decided scientifically, and the decision would have to be accepted even if it were disagreeable.

And to the argument that, on the theory of parallelism, history would be, without consciousness, what it now is, we may simply answer that, as the universe is, consciousness exists, and that the universe exists only once. It is nonsense to speak of another "possible" universe.

Thus the arguments *ad hominem* may be left to themselves. What is important and scientific in them narrows down to the point that the association-theory does not explain the origin of the *need*, in science, religion and ethics.

Most of the *ad hominem* arguments, by the way, do not relate to the parallelistic theory in particular, but to the much more general problem of determinism, which, as we shall see, might be true even if mechanistic parallelism is wrong. And consciousness proper might also be "superfluous" upon an anti-mechanistic basis.

iv. *Action as a non-mechanical natural phenomenon.*

We now proceed from mere anti-parallelistic

arguments or indicia to real proofs of the impossibility of the parallelistic theory. These proofs are of two very different kinds. In the first place we shall investigate whether a necessary consequence of psychomechanical parallelism is realized or not. We shall show that it is not. In the second place we shall compare the very essence of "the physical" and "the psychical," or of nature and mind, with one another, and shall be able to prove that this comparison makes the theory of parallelism absolutely and definitively fall through.

First, then, we have to do with a certain *consequence* of the theory.

Parallelism, as understood so far, pretends to be a psychomechanical parallelism. This implies, of course, that the physical "parallel" is of the type of mechanical states and events. The *actions of men* are the point in question, regarded as natural events. If, therefore, we can show that the action of man, regarded as a physical event, cannot be a mechanical event, parallelism in its usual form is disproved and refuted. For, according to a fundamental logical principle of the theory of conclusions, he who

proves that a consequence of a theory is not realized, proves at the same time that the theory is wrong.

The "consequence" in question, then, is the nature of human action as a physical process. Can this be explained mechanically or can it not? If not, mechanistic parallelism breaks down.

Quite intentionally we are here entering the field of the science of nature. All science of nature has to do with matter in motion and with nothing else. Matter in motion may follow mechanical or vital principles; for, in saying that a "system"—to use the expression common to physics—is a *material* one, nothing is said about its being *mechanical* or not. This is a separate question.

It is not very easy to regard the "acting man" from the point of view of pure natural science. We are too much accustomed to regard him at the same time as a psychical being also. But we are not allowed, in this chapter, to do this. The acting man, to us, is "matter in motion." What laws govern the motion? This alone is our problem. All psychological concepts,

therefore, have to be excluded; we are not, for instance, allowed to speak of "memory," "understanding," etc.

As I have fully dealt with this problem in my *Science and Philosophy of the Organism* I may be allowed to discuss the whole problem here in a curtailed way.

We make a sharp distinction between *faculty* of acting and *realization* of this very action at this very moment, and shall first discuss the one, then the other.

How is the *faculty* of acting of a given human being at a given time of his life to be characterized? On what, we may also ask, does this faculty depend, if by "faculty" we mean the sum total of all actions which this man *might* carry out at this given time?

The answer is that his specific faculty of acting has been historically acquired. It, in fact, depends on everything that has happened to the "material system" in question, namely, the man; it depends on his individual life-history with all its contingencies. Take, for instance, a baby: You know that this baby can be "made" a man who speaks English, or German, or French, or

## 130 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

Chinese, or Russian according to circumstances. In the common expression, we say that he "learns," that he has "memory" and acquires "experience." But we are not allowed to use these words, by self-restriction at this point, and must therefore put it neutrally.

The faculty of acting represents a historically acquired basis for future reactions; or, in short, *historical basis of reactions* is the first criterion of acting, relating to possibilities.

Now it will probably be said that this is just what mechanism requires. For there is a well-known machine, the phonograph, which also reacts on a "historically acquired basis," its reactions depending on what it had received in the past. This is quite true, and yet we should not care to say that an acting man is about the same as a phonograph. Perhaps we might say that an actor on the stage or a schoolboy reciting a poem has a certain similarity to a phonograph. But the man "acting" in the ordinary way, say during a conversation, in which he "asks" and "answers," is different certainly from the actor and the schoolboy.

What, then, is this difference and at the same

time, in even a stronger sense, the difference between the acting man and a phonograph? The difference is this: The phonograph throws back in their very specificity all the specific events it has received, while the man in action may resolve the specificities received into their elements and produce new specificities out of them. The phonograph, therefore, though also endowed with an historical basis of reaction in a certain sense, has a strictly *specified* basis, while man possesses a basis that may properly be called: *specified without strict limitation*.

We pause for a moment and ask whether there exist in the inorganic world machines endowed with a basis of reaction which is historically acquired by chance, and the elements of which may be newly combined in future reactions. We do not know of any such "machines." But we do not lay much stress upon our not knowing, for the present, and prefer to go on with the analysis.

We now have to do not with a faculty of acting in general, but with the *realization* of this very acting at this very moment. How is it characterized? On what does it depend?

*Action* is a reaction to a stimulus on the part of an organism, consisting in motions and resting upon a basis of faculties acquired by the individual history of the performer. This is what we know, so far. Let us now study the stimulus and the motion reaction, which are in question, a little more in detail. This may bring us to the discovery of a sound characteristic of action, as far as it is not only possible, but realized.

Stimuli and reactions are almost always not simple, but complex. This means that the stimulus does not consist in one single "seen" or "heard" quality, and the answer to the stimulus not in the contraction of one single muscle, but stimuli as well as reactions are combinations of singularities. What, now, about the relation in which both combinations stand with regard to one another?

In the inorganic world we also meet complicated systems standing in mutual causal relation. But the sum total of causality, starting, say, from system *A* and affecting system *B*, is pressed together, as it were, into what is usually called the *resultant*. The same *resultant* may

“result” from very varied complications, the best illustration of this concept being given by Newton’s principle of the parallelogram of forces. And, on the other hand, we are not able to learn, from our knowledge of a given resultant, from what combination it has come. To put it briefly: In mechanics all details or singularities of causality *disappear* in the resultant.

So much about what might be called “stimuli” of mechanically combined systems. In order, now, to study the stimuli concerned in action we had best start with a concrete instance, say a conversation between two friends.

We easily see that the concept of a *resultant*, in which all details disappear, does not come into account here. Take, for instance, the action-stimulus expressed in the words *My mother arrived this morning*. Of course, what the “stimulus” is here, in the strict sense of the word, is the physical sequence of air vibrations corresponding to the phrase in question; for we study action from the point of view of science, as we know, and not psychologically. We may say, then, that in action the physical resultant of the

physical stimulus does not play any rôle whatever; that, on the contrary, the details of the complex stimulus are of importance.

But in what sense? Certainly not in isolation, but with regard to the proper and specific place in which they stand in respect of the total stimulus. For, on the one hand, instead of being *My mother arrived this morning*, the stimulus might have been *Meine Mutter kam heute Morgen an*, or *Ma mère arrive ce matin*, without changing the effect, if it be supposed that the person addressed in the conversation has a particular sort of "historical basis," or, to put it less technically, that he "understands" German and French as well as English. On the other hand, *My mother arrived, etc.*, and *My brother arrived, etc.*, are by no means equivalent stimuli nor are *Meine Mutter, etc.*, and *Deine Mutter, etc.*, *Ma mère, etc.*, and *Ta mère, etc.*, though these stimuli, in each instance, differ only in a very small detail, namely with regard to one character (*br* for *m*, *d* for *m*, *t* for *m*).

Thus the result gained so far is this:

There is, firstly, no *resultant* in the mechan-

ical sense that might play a rôle in the complex stimuli of actions, but the details of the complex stimuli are important as details. Secondly, though details have this specific significance, they possess this significance only according to where they stand in the totality of the stimulus. And what holds of stimuli, holds of reactions, also, as illustrated by a conversation between two friends: The one side consists of "words heard," the other of "words spoken."

To sum up, then, let us say that, in action, stimuli as well as reactions are *wholes* or *individuals*, for the concept of *wholeness* or *individuality*—an indefinable concept, by the way—is just what covers the field here.

The main feature that characterizes the realization of action may now be called the *principle of the individuality of correspondence between cause and effect*.

If, for a moment, we may apply psychological terms for the relation in question, we can say, of course, that in action the stimuli are understood and the reactions have a "meaning"; that an English, German and French phrase may have

the same “meaning” for a person who “knows” these languages, and that *meanings* are the things “corresponding” with one another.

We now have everything we want: Action is a natural phenomenon that rests upon an historical basis acquired by chance and dissolvable into elements which may be newly combined, and that shows the characteristics of an individual correspondence to individual stimuli. Action, then, cannot be dissolved mechanically, i.e., it is not a mere *sum* or a mere *resultant*. It is, firstly, not true that the singularities of the stimuli are related to the singularities of the effect, and it is not true, secondly, that the stimulus acts as a mechanical resultant. These are the characteristics of mechanical becoming. Acting, therefore, regarded as a *natural* phenomenon, is not mechanical. The correct theory of action, therefore, strengthens the vitalistic theory of life, indeed, it is itself a chapter of this story.

We have only given a short account here of the theory of acting. The reader may refer to my broader discussion in the *Gifford Lectures*, or *Leib und Seele*, if he wishes to know more about details.

ism; but it is not. Therefore parallelism is untrue. It might be asked, then: What is "true"? However, we are not concerned with this question at this point. We have first to attack parallelism once more, from a different angle. Only after this has been done shall we proceed to positive statements.

v. *The physical and the psychical compared.*

In this section we shall not study a *consequence* of parallelism, but shall analyse what may be called "the matter itself," in order to find whether parallelism is right or not.

What, then, is "the matter itself"? It concerns, it seems to me, the question what "the physical" and "the psychical" are in their very essence. These two "essences," it seems, ought to be comparable in their most intimate structure, in order that ordinary parallelism should be possible—though even then it might not yet be true. Let us see on this ground whether we are not able to exclude the "possibility" of the theory in question.

By *essence of the physical* we mean the most

essential characteristics of the ultimate type of inorganic being and becoming. By *essence of the psychical* we mean the most essential characteristics in this realm. But what shall we take as *the psychical*? The unconscious, or the conscious, or both?

Now there cannot be any doubt that in the sense of the theory of ordinary phychomechanical parallelism, the concept of "the psychical" must exclusively be taken as meaning "the conscious." This is the "object" that comes at once under discussion; to "the conscious" alone does the usual theory of parallelism refer. For there are many parallelists who deny altogether the existence of the "unconscious psychical."

The psychical, then, in the sense of *the conscious*, is one of the objects of our analysis. This object, of course, must be analysed *as it is*, and not as it ought to be according to the wishes of certain parallelists. This seems self-evident. But it must be mentioned because, strange but true, there have been parallelists who do not regard the conscious *as it is*, with respect to the elements found in its sphere, but who construct a

psychical world hypothetically, which world then meets very well the parallelistic requirements without regard for the facts.

(1). *The general structural type in the physical and the psychical.*

The general structure of the physical differs in a most fundamental way from the structure of the psychical. Everything that belongs to nature is *near to* some other thing in space, the relation *near to*, in fact, being the most fundamental physical relation. The psychical, i.e., conscious objects, are, on the other hand, *centralized*. They are all related to one "point," as it were,—the Ego. This difference in general structure is fundamental, and it is scarcely understandable how two communities with such structural difference as described could be "the same" at bottom.

Let us not forget, however, that the word "centralized" describes the structure of the psychical only by analogy, but we have no better word. The fact is that there exists a far greater difference than the one expressed by the words "near" and "centralized," for the latter word

still suggests a certain modality of nearness, and there is no "nearness" at all in the psychical. Language here shows its insufficiency in the face of psychological facts.

(2). *The degree of manifoldness in the physical and the psychical world.*

The word "manifoldness" finds its first application in pure logic. One concept has a higher degree of manifoldness than another concept when more elemental, i.e., more indefinable concepts are necessary to define the first than to define the second. But we may apply the concepts of manifoldness and its degrees to empirical objects as well, i.e., to "somethings" which have a quasi-independent being and becoming. A lion, for instance, has a higher degree of manifoldness than a homogeneous sphere of iron.

Let us now apply the concept "degree of manifoldness" to the physical and the psychical worlds, not, however, to all details of these worlds, but to their essence, i.e., to that which makes them "physical" or "psychical."

Modern physics and chemistry tell us that all material bodies are composed of three elemental

## 142 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

constituents: protons, negative electrons, and ether. This, of course, is true only for a mechanistic view of all nature; if we accept vitalism, as we are, in my opinion, forced to do, other elementalities enter the field of nature as far as organic life is concerned. But we stand, *ex hypothesi*, on the ground of mechanism, for we are criticising psychomechanical parallelism. There are some physicists who believe that there is only one kind of element in physical nature, namely, the ether, and that the electrons are certain permanent dynamic states of it. But let us *assume* that there are three kinds of elements. For we must not avoid difficulties in our argument against parallelism; and we undoubtedly make it more difficult for ourselves if we accept three as the number of ultimate constituents in mechanical nature.

What, now, is the degree of manifoldness in the psychical? Our work is easy here, for we already have all we want, if only we go back to an earlier part of this book, namely, to the theory of materials and, in particular, to the theory of elements (page 12).

We have established six classes of real "elementaries," which are *consciously had*:

- I. Qualities or pure "suchnesses" (red, warm, sweet, white, *re*, etc.)
- II. Space and time data
- III. Pleasure and discomfort accents
- IV. Elemental signs of order or significances (this, not, related, etc.)
- V. Accents of truth (in order, not in order, already known, etc.)
- VI. Accents of the sphere of existence (merely *had*, belonging to phantasy, to reality, to a dream, etc.)

Thus we find not less than six *groups* of elements—probably even more, for I may have overlooked some—in the psychical world, each<sup>\*</sup> group containing many species, while in the physical world we find three species at the most.

This, now, is a definite argument against psychomechanical parallelism and really refutes it as a possible theory. If two communities possess not only a very different general structure,

## 144 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

but also a very different degree of manifoldness with regard to the characteristics of which they consist, it is an absurdity to assume that they are bottom *una eademque res, sed duobus modis expressa* (Spinoza), i.e., one and the same thing, expressed in two ways.

But there is still a hiatus in our argument, which the reader perhaps will have noticed. Have we not overlooked something in the realm of mechanical nature? There are three kinds of elements. But is there not an enormous variety of relations among these elements in the sphere of space? The electrons may have the arrangements of a triangle, or of a square, or of a cube; and they move along a circle, or a parabola, etc.

No doubt this is true. It seems, at first glance, to be a serious difficulty for us, but *only* at first glance.

The degree of manifoldness on the physical side is augmented by one rectification. Instead of the degree  $3$  we now have the degree  $3 + a$ ,  $a$  marking the enormous variety of all possible spatial relations. On the psychical side we had the degree of manifoldness  $n$ , and we were sure that  $n$  is greater than  $3$  ( $n > 3$ ). May it not be

now that  $n$  is equal to  $3 + a$ ? This, in fact, would make our whole argument worthless. And yet we can save it. For the enormous variety of spatial relations in nature exists in another form on the psychical side also, in view of the fact that every peculiarity in the realm of that variety may be *consciously possessed*.

Position in a triangle → I have "triangle."

Movement in a parabola → I have "parabola."

And thus we may add the number  $a$  on the psychical side also. But then our formula  $n + 3$  takes the form  $n + a > 3 + a$ . For an inequality remains an inequality, if we add the same integer to both sides.

#### vi. *Conclusions.*

The theory of psychomechanical parallelism is thus refuted. What is the consequence? Must we accept the theory of so-called psychophysical "interaction," because psychophysical parallelism in its ordinary form is untrue? Oddly enough, no—at least not without great restrictions. And this for the following reasons:

*Nature* and *mind* are two spheres of empirical existence which are absolutely separated from

## 146 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

one another and, therefore, are absolutely unable to act upon one another in a causal way. To assume that they were able would be sheer nonsense, at least on the ground of logic, or the theory of order. For the realm of metaphysics it may be different, but we have, so far, not assumed ourselves to be metaphysicians. Logic, then, must formulate what is usually called psychophysical interaction, as follows:

I have my conscious objects in temporal sequence. I establish the theoretical concept *my soul*, which means a quasi-independent object, the dynamic working of which results in certain states which themselves *have*, as their "parallels," "my conscious havings." This is a sort of parallelism between "my conscious havings" and certain states of my (unconscious) soul.

Now my body is among my empirical quasi-independent objects, as far as they belong to Nature. Like all organic bodies it is governed by a non-mechanical agent, entelechy. I am allowed here to speak of the entelechy of my body.

Now there is, firstly, "interaction" between the "entelechy" and the matter of my body, and vice versa. This interaction occurs in the realm

of nature, for "entelechy" is a factor *in nature*. But, secondly, the *working* of the "entelechy" of my body is "parallel" to the *working* of "my soul," certain *states* of which were parallel to "my conscious havings."

Thus we have before us *interaction* in the purely natural sphere, i.e., between entelechy and the matter of my body; and three "parallels," namely, the working of my "entelechy," the working of *my soul* and, as far as certain states of the soul are concerned, "*my conscious havings*."

This sounds very artificial, but logic is a very artificial instrument, so to speak. Metaphysically we shall find later on that *my soul* and my "entelechy" are One in the sphere of the Absolute. Then, and then only, may we speak of "psychophysical interaction," understanding, of course, the words "physical" and "psychical" not in that sense which they have in the field of *appearance*, but as denoting the metaphysical foundations of both nature and mind. But this can become quite clear only in a later chapter.

For the sake of simplicity, then let us now speak of psychophysical interaction or of the

## 148 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

interaction between body and mind, though, as we know, this is not quite correct in the realm of logic.

We know that the brain is the point where matter and mind come together; and they do it in a *causal*, not in a mere functional way, as we have proved. There is, then, a causal element in sensation as well as in the action of will. All we have said previously about these phenomena becomes more definite now, and at the same time, final, though still always in the sphere of a quasi-independence. For we are still logicians, and not yet metaphysicians.

The brain is a preformed system of almost innumerable *possible* connections. The mind uses this system, establishing *real* connections according to its unifying principles. The brain + soul = entelechy, *like* a great telephone station + its personnel.

To explain how this may be conceived is one of the objects of general vitalism. I have tried to analyse this problem in my *Philosophy of the Organism*.<sup>5</sup> Suffice it to say that we cannot see or touch "entelechy."

<sup>5</sup> 2nd German ed., 1921, pp. 416-94.

*C. Appendix: A Few Notes on Insanity*

A few words may be said here about the nature of so-called mental disease or *insanity*.

Is it the "soul" that is ill, or the brain? While we cannot decide this question directly, we can discuss the two possibilities that are present, especially that one which, I think, we must advocate, namely, that there is an "illness" of the brain, and not of the soul.

On this basis, then, we might say: An insane person is "insane" on account of the wrong data which he gets in the course of his conscious life. These data owe their existence to a disturbance of the physiology of the brain. We have said on a former occasion (page 97) that, whatever psychophysical theory with respect to the brain one may accept, there is in any case a univocally determined relation between some ultimate material state of the brain and a conscious content of the form of an image. This is the psychophysical postulate. On the basis of the fact expressed in this postulate it is now possible that in the brain itself, without irritation of the sense organs, conditions may arise which are such that they determine in an univocal way specific con-

scious images. Hallucinations probably belong here, and so do the wrong data<sup>6</sup> which are the foundation of all insanity. These data are wrong, of course, only in case they are taken to be what they are not, namely, a *something* that indicates an empirical object. They are not "wrong" in themselves. But the insane person takes them for indexes of empirical reality.

We must make a rather important distinction at this point. As long as a person who suffers from hallucinations or even so-called "forced ideas" knows that they are what we have just called them, he is not called "insane" in the deeper sense, though his psychical life is far from being "normal." But he is really insane as soon as he unhesitatingly takes the data as indexes of real objects, that is to say, as soon as he is the captive or prisoner of the data, as it were.

But does this fact not overthrow the whole theory of the importance of data for mental

<sup>6</sup> In my vitalism I have also introduced the concept of a wrong datum, namely in cases of superregeneration and the like. See *Philosophie der Organischen*, 2nd edit., 1921, pp. 441 and 484.

disease? Does it not seem as if the faculty of *judging* were disturbed? And is not this faculty something in the soul that is quite independent of the brain? Thus, then, it would seem as if the soul might be sick in spite of all. And yet I do not believe that we are forced to accept this hypothesis. On the one hand the level of the faculty of judgment depends on education and exercise; on the other hand there are also innate differences with regard to this faculty. Both facts may explain, in many cases, what at first glance appears as a disease of the soul; a good deal of "mental" illness would then be the consequence of a wrong interpretation of data on account of a weak faculty of judging, which is either innate or due to want of exercise.

While this hypothesis of course does not fully explain all, it may, nevertheless, show the way to an explanation.

There exists one great difficulty in the interpretation of mental diseases, as well as in the interpretation of the mental consequences of lesions of the brain, and this is the possibility that the conscious life of a person may perhaps be very different from his faculty to express it.

## 152 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

Even if we assume that we possess an innate idea of the *you* as previously explained (page 109), and that there is an innate faculty of correspondence between forms and rhythms in different fields of becoming (page 110), we must in most cases *infer* the particulars of the conscious states of another person by mere analogy. This means that we must interpret his movements, including his speaking, in the widest sense of the word. For his movements are the only thing that is really given to us. The other person now may not, however, be able to express his conscious life and we, therefore, may call him "mad" while he is not.

The same is true with regard to consequences of lesions of the brain, either by an accident or in the way of experiment. Aphasia and so-called mind-blindness have been much discussed in our day. The results have been very ambiguous : there may be aphasia without any discoverable lesion of the "language center," there may be lesion of that center without aphasia, and there is often both aphasia and lesion with no correspondence between the two, at least as to degree.

D. *Final Remarks on the Mind-and-Body Problem*

This now brings us to some concluding general remarks with regard to the problem of mind and body. Let us enumerate what happens psychophysically in a process which begins with a perception and ends in an action. There are, say, electromagnetic waves in a particular combination; the retina is affected, so is the optic nerve and a specific part of the brain; this affects "entelechy" and its parallel, the soul; *then I see an object.* Feelings and thoughts now arise, governed by "determining tendencies," then a particular "willing" comes in, marking a particular state of the soul and its parallel, "entelechy." "Entelechy" affects motor brain parts, this affection is followed by the stimulation of a motor nerve and the whole process ends in the contraction of certain muscles.

What, now, about that part of the process which begins with "I see" and ends with the origin of willing? This part may be called the *intrapychical series.* It is *not* possible, according to our theory, that the brain plays the fundamental

part in this process. But the brain may play a secondary rôle,—a rôle with regard to particulars. Here is the point where we are absolutely ignorant. Certainly the brain is not even the last basis of the mere fact of reproduction; for, as we have learned, reproduction is not *re*-production, but production, and we are not allowed to speak of real engrammata (page 124) in the brain. And it is still more impossible to assume that the brain *qua* material brain is the last point in the sequence of psychical events, which, as we know, is directed towards order and wholeness. And yet it might be possible that certain prerequisites with regard to the particulars of production are given in material cerebral states or conditions. In this case the brain would not merely be a system of connections, but more. But "more" in what sense? This we cannot even imagine hypothetically. The "wrong data" which underlie madness would in our opinion, of course, also be due to this unknown cerebral peculiarity.

Bergson, as far as I understand him, does not assume that the brain is more than a system of connections, and calls it an organ of "attitude." I recommend most intensively the thorough study

of his *Matière et Mémoire*, one of the profoundest, if not the profoundest, book of modern psychology.

In the field of the mind-body theory and the mind-brain theory in particular the new psychology differs most fundamentally from earlier theories, as you have seen, I trust, from our long discussion. And this difference does not only relate to the breaking down of psychomechanical parallelism. Without any particular regard to the question, whether parallelism is true or not, the older psychology used to go back to the brain for an explanation of most features in the sequence of psychical phenomena if not of all. The importance of the brain for psychical life in general can hardly be underestimated, but as to the *particular rôle* that the brain plays in relation to *particular* psychical phenomena, we know absolutely nothing with certainty.

The *soul*, therefore, though not very "modern" for a long time, has again come to occupy its rightful place, and there are even some psychologists, such as E. Becher, who have broken away almost completely from the engrammata theory as far as the brain is concerned, and who

## 156 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

do not hesitate to speak of engrammata of and in the soul, as Benecke had already done some hundred years before.

We ourselves are partisans of this theory. But on the other hand we lay stress upon the point that the brain must in no case become superfluous in any psychophysical theory, and that it might be somewhat more than merely a system of connections. Yet we do not know just what rôle it plays, and are able only to say that that rôle goes beyond the connecting function of the brain, and is certainly not of a primary but only of a secondary importance as far as the very essence of psychical phenomena is in question.

We, of course, mean here by the word "brain" the material brain, the brain as far as it is physicochemically characterized at any moment of its existence. We do *not* mean the brain as governed by entelechy, not brain + entelechy. The brain, then, *qua* material system is not responsible for the essence of the psychical, though it may be responsible for certain particulars in its sphere. The brain + entelechy, on the other hand, or the brain *qua* "physiological or vital

system" is, of course, responsible for psychical essence, for *entelechy* is "parallel" to *soul*.

So much or, rather, so little on the subject of mind and brain. We shall now leave psychophysics, at least insofar as it has been our special subject, although we shall still have to say a good deal about the organization of mind or soul. But it seems to me that, before we do this, it would be wise to put the whole discussion on a higher plane. On a former occasion (page 105) we introduced the concept of the "other" Ego, in order to be a little more free in our discussion. The "other" Ego, we know, still remained in the realm of a mere *quasi-existence*, just as "my soul" did. For we did not leave the field of the theory of order, i.e., the realm of the *I have something consciously*.

We shall now, however, take a more decisive step. We shall give up the "quasi," the "as if" of the theory of order. We shall place the whole discussion upon a *metaphysical* plane. But do not assume that our metaphysics will be in a phantastic or mystical sphere.

### III

## THE METAPHYSICS OF MIND

THE foundation of metaphysics concerns the meaning of the term *real*, i.e., the term, being or existing *in itself* and not only “for myself” in the sense of a *something* that is *consciously had*. *Esse*, then, in the sphere of reality would be more than a mere *percipi* or *concipi*.

We cannot prove, now, that reality “exists.” We can only say that according to our intuition the word “real” *has* a meaning, just as much as the words “relation” and “so many.” We “see” that there will be more of order, if the theory of order will only give way and become more than a mere theory of “order.” For reasons of order, then, the theory of order gives way and becomes the theory of reality, or metaphysics.

Metaphysics being established, the totality of what is generally called experience in the broadest sense of the word, i.e., the totality of what is consciously and immediately had or what is meant as a quasi-independent object, becomes the appearance of reality.

It is not, however, the task of this book to show in detail how metaphysics is possible and what methods it may apply.<sup>1</sup> It has to do, first, with the world of empirical objects. These objects are not real in the form of their appearance; but the various forms of appearance are signs or marks of so many various sides of reality. A good deal may thus be made out about the metaphysical significance of space, matter, time and causality. The problem of wholeness, personal and suprapersonal, enters the scene, and so does the famous problem of freedom. About this problem we shall have something to say at the end of the book.

What, however, does interest us here in particular is the metaphysical meaning of "the psychical," i.e., of the *I have consciously* or *I know*, at least primarily.

Space and everything spatial is "appearance" of a certain system of relations in the Absolute, unknowable to us "as such," and knowable only with regard to the manifoldness of its particulars. So it is, also, with matter, time, causality, and wholeness.

<sup>1</sup> See my *Wirklichkeitslehre*, 2nd edit., 1922.

Is now *knowing*, or rather the *I know*, also “appearance”?

Knowing is the kind of relation that makes all particular knowledge, including all philosophy, possible. It is a unique kind of relation, for it does not connect *objects* with one another, but *the subjective with objectivity as a whole*. In this sense, as we know, the *I have something consciously* is for us at the bottom of all.

It now seems to us that it would be meaningless to say that a something “appears” to the Ego in the form of knowing. On the contrary, as soon as the concept of Reality or the Absolute has been established, *knowing* becomes part of it at once. Reject the concept of Reality, or admit that the *I have something consciously* is part of it, and this is the only alternative left.

In the form of the basic fact, *I have something*, part of Reality knows *itself as it is* and the *rest* in the form of *appearance*. Thus “*knowing*” becomes a *quale* of the Absolute, the only *quale* of it which we know, *as it is*, immediately.

Knowing is now also given to us indirectly, in the realm of appearance. There are other men, and animals, and vital entelechies, all of which

behave *as if they knew*, and it even seems as if I had an innate knowledge about "you-ness" or "otherness" with regard to subjectivity in general (page 111).

Thus Reality contains many subject-points, so to speak, which *know* in various forms, one of which, the *Ego-knowing*, I know immediately. Of the other forms a certain part is fully understandable to me, namely, the knowing of other men. Another form I understand only in part, for example, the knowing of a dog or a horse. The rest, namely, instinctive knowing and entelechical knowing, I can hardly understand at all.

But one very important point must still be emphasized in this brief exposition: Subjects and objectivity are parts of *One*, namely of *Reality*. It is not a case of Reality "*and something else*," the subject. This would be nonsense. There is the One Reality, and it is such as to contain, as its most fundamental relation, *knowing*. Inside the sphere of Reality *and* knowing the particulars of known contents must be acquired by way of sensation, that is, in a causal way. This, at least, is true for my knowing, for "*Ego-knowing*." But it seems that there are other

## 162 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

kinds of subjects, which do not need experience in order to know about particulars. It is these kinds of knowing subjects which we are unable to understand in full.

## IV

### THE ORGANIZATION OF MIND

WE now come to the final chapters of this book. These chapters will, on the one hand, be a sort of summary of everything studied before, though on a higher plane, and, on the other hand, will bring into the discussion many materials that have so far not been taken into consideration.

Our psychology did not start from empirical facts, but from the primordial fact, *I have something consciously*. The concepts of my body, of sense organs, nerves and brain, of psychophysics, of the soul, "my own" and "others," were introduced step by step, since this was necessary in the interests of *order*. For psychology was to us a part of the general theory of order or logic, namely, with regard to the sequence of *my conscious somethings* in time, and only ultimately was the metaphysical point of view introduced to replace the merely logical one.

## 1. CRITICAL REMARKS

A. *Brentano and Husserl*

In the first place I should like to compare my own conception of psychology with that of some modern authors, especially Brentano and Husserl, both of whom are men of great influence.

Brentano has introduced into modern psychology a well known concept from medieval philosophy, but has almost forgotten, further on, the concept of the *intentional act* or, in brief, the "act."

Brentano and his followers tell us that every psychical or conscious "thing" consists of four parts: the I, the act, the content and the object. They further tell us that the act may have different forms, such as thinking, assuming, willing, etc.

To this we make answer:

Firstly, that in our opinion the distinction between content and object only holds when the object is of an empirical sort, belonging either to nature or soul in this quasi-independence, i.e., provided it is a *mediate* object which is meant by an immediate one, to apply our own terminology. But with regard to immediate objects,

contents and object are the same. I do not mean " $\sqrt{2}$ " by something else, but I *have* the significances  $\sqrt{2}$ , triangle, etc., quite immediately.

Secondly, we do not believe that there are various forms of "act," but that "having consciously" is the only form of act, and that all varieties of psychical things are varieties in the sphere of objects in the immediate sense, the objects having in one case one kind of *accent*, in another case another kind (page 28). This is in opposition to both Brentano and Husserl, the greatest of Brentano's disciples.

But now I must bring out something in opposition to Husserl alone. Husserl does not assume, as does Brentano, that all psychical phenomena are "act" phenomena, but he admits psychical phenomena without "intention," as, e.g., sensation, i.e., he admits that these phenomena are merely *erlebt*. I reply that these phenomena are also, no doubt, *consciously had*, and that to this extent they are act-phenomena, because *having consciously* is the act. For *consciously having* is always a *having of significances*, however dim and little analysed it may be; and for this reason *consciously having* is always "intentionally"

## 166 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

having, even when it is not a *meaning* of empirical objects, but a mere *having* of contents (or immediate objects). This has been the very basis of our "modern psychology," a basis which may also be expressed by the statement that to be conscious is the same as "to *have* consciously with intention," or "to *have* significances."

There is, however, no special "region" of significance in the Platonic sense. Psychical or conscious phenomena *are* phenomena that are themselves invested with significance, and there "is" no significance except insofar as it "exists" as part of a psychical or conscious possession. Only in an artificial way may we abstract from conscious existence and study significances as such, as we do in mathematics; but we must never forget that we are in this case proceeding artificially. So much, by the way, against all neo-Platonism.

We ourselves, to come back to the point, have never used in our system the words "act" or "intention," because, as we have stated, in our opinion there is only one species of the genus *act*, namely, *having*, in the sense defined, and for

this reason the name of the species may serve as the name of the genus too.

It must be emphasized that Husserl says, most markedly, that he does not intend to advocate any sort of conscious "activity" in using the word "act." In this respect I fully agree with Husserl. There is, in fact, no conscious doing or making. But I think that just for this reason we ought to avoid the word "act" completely, as it too easily suggests "activity."

Brentano is not very keen in regard to the question whether there is conscious activity or not. He shares this deficiency with all philosophers and psychologists of former times, except Geulinck.

#### *B. On So-Called "Understanding" Psychology*

Another sort of polemics must follow the first.

We have spoken of the problem whether there is an original knowledge about the "you," or the "other ego." We also spoke about our "understanding" of other psychical life (page 161), saying that we may have this understanding either in full, or in part, or not at all—the first

being possible with regard to other human beings only.

Now there have been some authors, and among them Dilthey and Jaspers as their leaders, who have spoken of two sorts of psychology, namely of an *understanding* and of an *explaining* psychology, and who have told us that these two varieties stand side by side and are of equal scientific value.

I cannot agree with this statement. "Understanding" psychology, is, in my opinion, not itself a scientific psychology, but only a preparation for this. It collects materials for scientific psychology, under the assumption that we may speak of "other" psychical life at all, but it does nothing more. But the collecting of materials and the "explaining" of them, i.e., the bringing of them into a scheme of order, never stand side by side as equivalents.

If I "understand" another Ego's knowing, this only means to me that there is nothing which is new in principle, but merely another *case* of the same *class*. This may be a great simplification, no doubt. But simplification and explanation are not the same.

## 2. THE SOUL

We now take up again the analysis of the organization of the soul in full. In doing this we may now speak of many souls, and not alone of my own soul (page 114), and we may now also speak of *knowing* as a characteristic of reality (page 160).

The soul of human beings is a non-spatial and non-extended being, and yet it is manifold in itself. Let us call it an *intensive manifoldness*. As we are able to analyse only extensive or spatial manifoldnesses in ultimate detail, we see at once that our knowledge of mental manifoldness must remain very fragmentary.

The soul is in the main an *unconscious* being; only part of it is conscious in the form of the "I have something." But the word "unconscious" is intended only to express the meaning that the soul in full is not the Ego which I know, or, rather, which knows itself. It may be that the soul in full has the Ego-form also. But this would mean that the soul would be an *alter Ego* with regard to the *I-Ego* and would not be quite understandable to the latter, for it would have to be regarded as doing and not alone as *having*.

(which is the characteristic of the I-Ego). The soul-Ego therefore would be an *alter Ego* in not quite the same sense in which so-called dissociated Egos, belonging to one soul and one body, are *alter Egos* with regard to one another. For the soul-Ego and the I-Ego would represent two species of "Ego-ness."

The soul is dynamic. It "does" something. It works. We may say, somewhat loosely, that the words "thinking" and "willing," with reference to the soul, now take on their usual meaning. This meaning does not stand in its right place, however, when applied to the Ego, for it is the most fundamental and the most certain result of all mental analysis that the Ego in the form of the I-Ego only *has* or possesses, but does not "do."

The willing, feeling and thinking soul, then, is a theoretical constructive hypothetical concept, meaning *a dynamic something*, just as the concepts "chemical affinity" or "potential energy" mean something dynamic. But we need that concept; for we wish *order*, which afterwards we interpret metaphysically.

The dynamic soul is always working as a

whole. Its non-spatial organization is one whole; and another whole is formed by all materials acquired in life and preserved by the faculty of memory. The second wholeness depends on the first: the materials are inserted at specific "localities," as it were, of the (non-spatial) innate whole organization.

All dynamic concepts applied by ordinary experimental psychology, such as association, "determining tendency," etc., are only of a preliminary kind and must never overshadow the basic wholeness.

Specific mental wholeness of a mental subject is the foundation of his so-called *character*.

Those authors who apply the concept of "act" or "intention" in a fundamental sense (page 164), used to speak, at the same time, of various kinds of attitudes.<sup>1</sup> There is the intellectual attitude, the moral, the esthetic, and the religious, each of them related to a certain specific "value."

Now we have repeatedly said that the *I* only performs one sort of act, namely, *consciously having*, and that, for this reason, it always has

<sup>1</sup> *Einstellung* in German.

the same "attitude." But, nevertheless, there is a certain truth in the doctrine of a variety of attitudes, if only this concept be applied not to the Ego, but to the Soul.

*I have*; and *having* is always the same. But my soul may be said to be in various attitudes according to whether it works upon one kind of "somethings" or upon another kind. If it devotes itself to mere questions of order in general, it is in the *intellectual* attitude. It takes the *moral* attitude whenever it tries to find out the forms of order in the system of the actions of man, including "my own" actions. It is in the *esthetic* attitude, if it considers sensible singularities with regard to the essence expressed by them. It has a *religious* attitude, when devoted to the consideration of the dualism of reality and its discrepancy with the ideal of a monism of order. And it is an inexplicable fact that moral and religious attitudes of the soul are always accompanied by a strong accent of feeling, consciously possessed by the Ego that corresponds to that soul.

But all attitudes are "attitudes" of the soul and not of the Ego, which *has* only *contents* of

various forms. On the other hand, the variety of so-called attitudes on the part of the soul is by no means exhausted by the words intellectual, moral, esthetic, religious. We may here specify much more in detail and may speak of a mathematical attitude, an attitude towards so-called formal logic, towards problems of the order of nature, etc.

Of course we may also classify attitudes under a different heading, speaking of pure *intuition*, of *wishing*, of *willing*, etc., with reference to one particular given content. But then also we must say that *I have* in every case in the same way, and only with regard to the doing soul may we say that different sides of its inner dynamics are at work in each case.

The dynamics of the soul is threefold. There is firstly the *inner dynamics*, which is the foundation of our inner mental life, i.e., of the so-called stream of consciousness which, however, does not really exist as a "stream" (page 46). Here we have to do with the "intrapsychical" series, mentioned above (page 153). "Determining tendencies" are working in a directing way, limiting forces and associative affinities being at

## 174 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

their disposal just as material forces are at the disposal of vital entelechy. But the whole-making ordering power of the soul in full is always at the bottom of all. The part played by the brain here is unknown, but does certainly not affect the essentials (page 156).

During the soul's working that part of the soul which we call the I-Ego becomes consciously aware of certain *results* of that working. Feelings, thoughts, images of phantasy, of memory, contents of thoughts stand before the *I*, one after the other. The temporal sequence of these various forms of "ideas" is, of course, that which is immediately given, and the whole dynamics of the soul is, as it were, invented for its explanation.

Secondly, there is the physicopsychical or *centripetal* dynamics of the soul. The body is affected by a physical stimulus; this then affects the parallel duplicity, *entelechy-soul*, and this affection becomes conscious to the "I-Ego" in the form of a *perception*. Perceptions are destined to give notice to the *I* either of states of the body related to it, or of states and conditions of the medium, both, however, in the form

## 176 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

of our knowledge is a *picture* of reality or merely a *symbolic* expression of it.

In the pure theory of order a theory of *knowledge* has no place, because the concept of "knowledge" in the narrow sense of the term has no place in it, or only perhaps in the form of "quasi-knowledge." For "knowledge" in the *narrow* sense of the word means the possession of a something which exists in itself, or which is alien to the one who possesses it, while the pure theory of order, takes knowing merely in the *general* sense of *I have consciously*, and does not speak of a something which exists in itself and is only touched, as it were, by knowing.

Only if there is the "I" on the one side of reality and the "else," which has a nature or essence *in itself*, on the other side, can there be a real meaning to the question, whether I conceive the "else" "as it is" or in the form of mere symbols.

Psychology, it is true, may already, in the sphere of a mere theory of order, speak of what we have called a *quasi-knowledge* insofar as it considers things and other Egos as something which exists *as if* they were independent. But this

point of view is very artificial and we prefer to discuss in this book<sup>2</sup> the outlines of a theory of knowledge in its psychological form on metaphysical grounds exclusively.

A real theory of knowledge, then, requires the concept of *absolute being*, of *metaphysical being*, as its foundation. On this basis alone the question whether our knowledge is a picture or merely a symbol has a real meaning.

Kant has formed a very interesting conception of real knowledge: He agrees that the "else" exists, but says that we cannot know it as it is *in itself*. The "else" affects the unconscious mind; this mind then invests the "else" or its effects with certain forms that are virtually innate, namely, quality, time, space, the categories, and then at the end, presents the results in these forms to the mind's conscious part, the Ego.

This conception *may* be true. However, we can never know whether it is or not, for we are unable to "compare" an *in itself* with a *for myself* and, therefore, it *may* be that the forms which stand before our conscious side and are

<sup>2</sup> A purely psychological theory of knowledge in the sphere of logics is to be found in my *Ordnungslehre*, 2nd edit., 1923, pp. 315 ff.

## 178 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

regarded as fabrications of the mind by Kant are in fact constituents of the objective side of reality "in itself." In any case this may be true with regard to the categories. Then there would be a sort of immediate basic harmony among the "giving" forms on the objective side of reality and the "receiving" forms on the subjective side.

But even on the foundation of the theory of Kant our view of the world is not a mere fiction; in *any* case it is a *symbolic* expression of reality, though it may not be a true picture of it. For the degree of manifoldness of reality must correspond to the degree of manifoldness of its subjective expression. Otherwise a postulate of logic would be violated.

We possess certain original forms of order, which permit us to establish a system of doctrines independent of empirical experience or at least of the amount of it. Thus we know at once and in an absolutely definite way, for example, that the straight line is the shortest line between two points, that only one parallel is possible to a given line through a given point outside it. These statements are called *a priori*. They are like instinctive knowledge with regard to the

spatial relations of empirical things and motions.

The same is true, though in a somewhat different way, with regard to other principles, such as the principle of causality. You may say that this principle is not quite irreducible, that it may be dissolved into elements. Thus we may say that it is nothing but the concept of *reason* and *consequence* applied to *becoming*. And yet the non-philosophical individual applies the principle of causality in an instinctive way without knowing of its complexity. He knows *a priori* that every event must have a cause, of whatever sort. Even the savage knows this and acts accordingly.

The essential point is, however, that what we call causality in the realm of appearance corresponds to a certain system of relations in the Absolute, the essence in itself of which we cannot know. And so does space with all its relations. We thus know *a priori* or, in psychological terms, "instinctively" much that is at least connected with the relations of Reality, even if we do not know the absolute quality of the latter.

A very important question, now, is whether

we have other such instinctive knowledge, besides that which relates to space, time and the most general categories. I believe that we have.

Thus we have spoken of an *original you-certainty* on a former occasion (page 108). Also we have an innate knowledge of the boundaries of our body, for each of our sensations of being touched refers to quite a specific locality of the body as a whole. Also in so-called moral feeling we have an instinctive general knowledge of our belonging to a suprapersonal spiritual community. Finally what is called "impulse"<sup>3</sup> belongs here, and has been studied in a profound way by McDougall with special reference to man.

We thus seem to possess many innate instinctive "knowledges," at the bottom of all of which there is the original knowing of "somethings," of "objectivity," which is one of the essential constituents of *knowing* itself, and is applied by the lay person in quite an immediate unreflecting way. Even the philosopher, however, though he is forced to destroy this belief in objectivity in its primitive form, is forced to reconstruct it in a critical fashion. For, I believe, there is in fact

<sup>3</sup> *Trieb* in German.

not a single philosopher who does not give to the concept of true *Reality* some place in his system, even though it be a remote one.

Thus we have, then, an *a priori* or, in psychological terms, an innate instinctive knowledge about objectivity or "otherness" in general, about other minds, about our body, about a suprapersonal community to which we belong, and about some general spatial and categorical relations of the objective part of reality in the form of appearance.

All this constitutes a community of schemata which are to be filled with special contents by so-called empirical experience in the way of sensations. Sensation does not create consciousness, but occurs innate in the realm of given consciousness with all its essentials, the most fundamental of which is the essential relation *knowing*, or, *I have something*, or *subject-object*.

Why do not we possess more? Why do we need sensation and perception? Why are we not *monads* which, in the sense of Leibniz, represent a complete "universe of the universe" in an original and primordial way?

It is not at all nonsensical to raise this ques-

## 182 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

tion. For we know that there are other "subject-points" which in fact possess more of innate knowledge than we possess, and, on the other hand, it is almost certain nowadays that man also may occasionally, in the form of clairvoyance, possess more of it than he does "as a rule," the "rule" therefore being not an inevitable law, but only an expression of the average.

The aprioristic schematic knowledge which we possess about objectivity in general, about other minds, our body, spatial and causal general relations, etc., is, of course, not independent of experience *qua* actual conscious knowledge, but is *a priori* present only in a virtual way with regard to consciousness. It becomes actual knowledge whenever any particular experience occurs, and this is in a way which can best be described by the words: "I might have known this before."

The totality of the aprioristic instinctive virtual schemata forms the main part of what we have called the organic action of the unconscious soul. We may suppose hypothetically that all "determining tendencies" and latent directing potencies (page 62) originating during the men-

tal life of an Ego, have their ultimate foundation here. In other words : The original organized constitution of the unconscious mind determines which groups of tasks and wishes will be consciously had by an Ego, all details being determined by experience.

A full investigation of all that is "instinctive" in some way in man, is very much needed and will not be found to be a very difficult task after McDougall's work.<sup>4</sup> Sexual, feeding, "power" instincts and many others belong here.

The mental diversities among men are expressed, as everybody knows, by the diversities of their tasks and wishes. This diversity may in part be due to the contingencies of actual experience, one person having certain experiences in one field, another person, other experiences in another field. But this is not all. There are also original and primordial mental diversities among human individuals. What is the reason? Why is not mind always exactly the same, at least as far as its original, dynamic organization is concerned? Or may we say that, in fact, mind is always the same *qua* mind or soul, and that all

<sup>4</sup> *Social Psychology*.

innate diversities in character and talent depend exclusively on the contingencies of the material organization of the body? If this were the case we should come back again to the question as to what rôle the brain *qua* material brain plays in psychology (page 156). But again an answer is impossible.

#### 4. VARIOUS FORMS OF KNOWING

Let me say still a few more words about the ordinary forms of knowing which differ from the form that is given to man.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>5</sup> We intentionally do not speak, in this book, of the problem of an *evolution* of the mind, either ontogenetic or phylogenetic. For there are many good books on the "psychology of the child," and, on the other hand, the phylogenetic question is still very unsettled. See Krüger, *Entwicklungspsychologie*. See also page 76, where I have stated that we never know whether we have to do with a real embryonic evolution of the mind or merely with the brain's embryology. The acquisition of known contents, of course, is not evolution. Whether the *structure* of mind evolves itself embryologically—that is the question.

The question of a suprapersonal mind will also not be discussed in this book. Let me only say that, though there may be one suprapersonal mind embracing all men or even all organisms, there is certainly not a specific supra-mind that embraces a particular nation or people. What

There is no reason to assume that primitive man has an organization of mind which is essentially different from ours. He merely does not know what criticism and what analysis are, that is all. Even the very thorough book of Levy-Bruhl on the *Thinking of Primitive Tribes* has not convinced me that the opposite is true. Primitive man has all the categories, in particular causality, and differs from ourselves insofar as he fills them with content in a very uncritical way. He certainly does not know Mills' laws of induction. But this does not mean that the structure of his mind is *essentially* different from ours. We may even find the "primordial" type of mind among very uneducated people of our own country, in particular with regard to religious ideas. The so-called primordial mind is therefore related to the critical mind, as mythology is to metaphysics. There is the same fundamental structure in both, the same "scheme of

has been called *Volksseele* by certain German authors may all be reduced to conscious or unconscious suggestion or imitation. Whoever accepts a *Volksseele* as a particular entity must also accept such an entity for a university or even a club!

## 186 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

order" in our terminology, or the same form, and it is only the filling out of this form with empirical contents that constitutes the difference.

The mind of animals can be studied only by the behavioristic method, and this has been very ably done, especially in America by Jennings, Thorndike, Yerkes, Watson and others. The faculty of memory extends down to the infusoria. Association and "determining tendencies" are certainly at work in dogs, cats, elephants and even the octopus and the starfish. People used to say that animals, though endowed with "intelligence," lacked the faculty of "abstraction." I do not believe that this argument meets the main point; besides, it is rather vague. The main point of difference between human and animal intelligence is, it seems to me, firstly, that animals cannot dissolve and recombine their "historical basis" (page 130) to such an extent as can man. "A sausage and a stick are, as it were, letters of the dog's alphabet," I have said elsewhere. Secondly, that animals never possess *explicitly* the categories or signs of order, though they act according to them implicitly; they know

what a thing is, but they do not *consciously have* the meaning of "thing."

Everything becomes different as soon as we turn to *instinctive* performances, as present for example, in birds, ants, and bees. Their instincts are much richer than ours, which always remain quite general and indefinite.

The difference between an instinctive performance and an action is this: The instinctive performance is perfect in its typical specificity of combination the very first time it occurs, while action may and must be improved as experience proceeds. This implies that there must be quite a particular sort of knowing at the bottom of instinct. The bird must have a sort of image of his nest, the bee of its hive. The older naturalists have well said that animals with instincts "dream" in advance of what they are to perform. Instinctive faculty is like the faculty of an artist, say, a painter; it is not an exceptional, but a generic faculty. Such knowing we do not *understand* at all. And still less do we understand the "knowing" which must underlie in some way the working of vital entelechy in

embryology or in morphogenetic restitution. Like an instinct, entelechy works without subsequent improvement, perfectly from the very beginning. To instinct therefore, not to intelligence, it must be compared. But both are forms of knowing.

#### 5. THE DYNAMICS OF WILL

We have stated that the dynamics of the soul is threefold (page 173), that it consists of an inner, a centripetal dynamics and a centrifugal part. The inner dynamics we have discussed at length in previous chapters; some important topics which relate to centripetal dynamics were analysed in the chapter on psychophysics and in the paragraph just above. For everything that has to do with the acquisition of knowledge and with various forms of innate knowledge, belongs here. We now have to add a few words on *centrifugal* dynamics, completing what has already been said about will.<sup>6</sup> For with the *consciously*

<sup>6</sup> Only outer or "centrifugal" will (page 175), of course, is the subject of discussion here, the dynamics of inner or "centripetal" will belonging to the inner dynamics of mental life exclusively.

*having* of a will content, specific centrifugal dynamics sets in.

Let us assume, in the first place, that, for example, I have the *will* to write a letter, but that I do not have the *will* to contract certain muscles of my fingers. Nay, I do not even have the *will* to take my pen, though my hand takes it. This tells us that the conscious side of all willing is extremely limited; it relates to some final state exclusively, at least in most cases, all intermediate states necessary for the accomplishment of the former being reached "automatically." And this means that conscious willing is an index of a certain state of the mind which, on its part, makes effective a certain dynamics that remains almost entirely in the unconscious sphere. *I will a certain end, and my soul knows what is to be done in order to reach it.*

My conscious willing may originate in immediate correspondence to a perception, as in the case of my seeing a friend at some distance and having the will to meet him. But it also may originate in what is generally called the "spon-

## 190 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

taneous" way, that is to say, in the course of the dynamics of my inner mental life.

All this will prove to be of importance with regard to certain psychological phenomena which will be discussed very soon.

In certain cases there exists a certain conflict as to what is to be "willed," the so-called conflict of motives. And it is here that the competition of various feelings which has been mentioned above<sup>7</sup> sets in, the one feeling possessing the stronger accent of pleasure, the other the stronger accent of finality ("depth" or "weight" according to Krüger). One of the two feelings will be victorious and will thus determine *the will proper*, and therefore action. We shall come back to this problem again, when discussing *freedom*.

### 6. ON CERTAIN MODIFICATIONS OF MENTAL LIFE

#### A. *Terminology*

We return to the general analysis of the organization of the *human* mind or soul, a topic which is by no means finished.

Let us, in the first place, introduce a few

<sup>7</sup> p.35.

technical terms which will prove to be of great importance for all that is to follow, and make the discussion much more simple and easy.

By the term *simple memory*, or memory without a temporal accent, I shall understand the faculty of remembering any part of past experience merely with regard to its quality, but without reference to the particular connection in which it has stood in the totality of experience, and, therefore, without a specific time accent.

By the term *specified memory*, or memory with a temporal accent, I shall mean the faculty of remembering any part of the past experience with particular reference to its "date," i.e., the particular temporal and other relations in which it has stood.

The faculty of speaking a foreign language, then, belongs to the phenomena of simple memory, while to remember what I said a week ago at noon belongs to specified memory.

**B. The Meaning of the Word "Unconscious"**  
Still another introductory remark will prove to be of importance.

By the word "unconscious" we have already

denoted a *something* which, though belonging to the psychical sphere and not being physical, is yet not a *something* which "I have" or "have had." We now simply add that "unconscious" is to mean the same both as not being conscious and as not having been conscious. This seems self-evident and quite superfluous. But, strange to say, it is not. For there are certain authors who speak of "unconscious ideas," i.e., of "unconscious conscious contents," terms that are sheer nonsense, and there are others who speak of "unnoticed ideas," which is also sheer nonsense, though perhaps not so apparent, for this also means and can only mean an idea which is not and has not been a conscious idea. Everything that is "not noticed," therefore, is not or has not been conscious, and is, therefore, *nothing* in the realm of conscious contents.

In this connection we at once raise another question in order to settle it for all time.

Can I "remember" something which I have never *consciously* possessed, not even in the dimmest way, though I *might* have possessed it in so far as the stimulus in question has affected, for example, my ear or my eye? Or is this im-

possible, and must every case in which this phenomenon seems to have occurred be related to a real past conscious possession which has been merely forgotten very quickly and definitely? Or, to state the problem in more concrete terms: I am walking along the street in order to go into a certain shop, but I am talking with a friend, and am inattentive to the matter of the shop. Suddenly I notice that I have already passed my objective. What has happened? Did I really not "see" the name in question and yet "remember" to have seen it? Or did I see but at once forget? The truth is, unfortunately, that we do not know. But in any case if I have not seen, then I have *not* "seen," and to speak of an "unconscious having seen" remains a *contradictio in adjecto*.

Now that our preparatory work has been done, we may proceed with our discussion as to the mind's organization.

### C. *Classification and Description*

The mind or soul may, firstly, pass through consecutive or, rather, alternative states which are very different in structure with regard to the

conscious part, and there may be, secondly, certain states of the mind which are separated into two or more strata, as it were, each endowed with an Ego, the strata being in causal interaction with one another. Thirdly, there is the phenomenon of two alternating Egos of the same general structure, but with different contents; and, finally, there is the splitting off of certain fragments of the mind that are not endowed with an Ego, but that affect the one Ego which exists as a whole.

i. *Dreams.*

The first of these implies the phenomenon of *dream* in its alternation with waking, on the one hand, and the phenomenon of the hypnotic state, in its alternation with the normal state, on the other hand. The second phenomenon is generally described by the words *consciousness* and *subconsciousness*. The third is called *dissociation* of personality; it is mostly combined with the phenomenon of subconsciousness. The fourth is the phenomenon of the co-called *complexes* of Freud.

All these phenomena may be combined in some way. They do not interest us with regard to their

specific peculiarities, but only with regard to what they reveal as to the essence of the soul.

Let us, then, first consider the chief characteristics of *dreams* in relation to our discoveries in the field of the normal psychology of waking conscious life. There is no doubt that dreams are sequences of *somethings* which are *consciously had*. And the Ego of "my" dreams is the same as the Ego of my waking, for I may remember "my" dreams, and while dreaming I remember a good deal of my experiences in the waking state. Thus it seems as if with regard to the Ego-relation and memory there were only slight differences between dreaming and waking; and yet these are rather important differences, as is shown, if we go into details.

With regard to *remembering*, there seem, however, to be more important differences. Thus in the waking stage I remember, or at least may remember, the contents of my dreams in the form of *specified* memory, while in dreams only *simple* memory, i.e., memory without a temporal accent, is at work. This means that, while dreaming, I recognize what a house or a dog is, but without any reference to the real temporal and causal re-

## 196 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

lations of the past. Simple memory is thus very strong in dreams; for very often things long forgotten appear in them, though without a specified accent of time.

As to *Ego-ness* it is true that the waking and the dreaming Ego are the same *qua* Egos, and yet one very strange characteristic of the dream is closely related to the concept of *Ego-ness*: The *somethings* I have in my dreams are, of course, all *my somethings*. But I possess some of them, very often at least, as if another person were telling me about them; for instance, it often happens that I "ask" somebody a question while dreaming, and get an "answer" from him. Let us call this strange form of knowing: *Knowing in the form of alien knowing*, or, more explicitly, *knowing in the form of knowing about another subject's knowledge*. For the situation is this: I know in the form, "as if I knew that another person knows"! This strange form of knowing will prove to be of general importance.

The general structure of dreams in contrast to that of waking psychical life is often described by saying that all directing agents are absent in them, and that pure association oc-

cupies the field exclusively. This is most decidedly wrong. For dreams have significance and meaning and are by no means chaotic, nay, they are sometimes very dramatic.

But there are other features in the structure of dreams which may serve to distinguish them from waking life.

Firstly, there is an enormous prevalence of the *sensible*<sup>8</sup> in dreams: one picture follows another. This is not the same thing as saying that no abstract elements exist in dreams. Such elements exist, but they are dim and quite overshadowed by the sensible.

Secondly, and this is the most important characteristic, there prevails in dreams what might briefly be called lack of judgment. This feature is related to the lack of specified memory in dreams, but it means more than this. The accents of finality, of "being in order," are absolutely lacking. We have forgotten all our knowledge about laws of nature—and are not at all astonished about it.

What, then, is the *meaning* of dreams? What do they express?

<sup>8</sup> *Anschaulich*, in German.

Freud, it seems to me, was right in saying that in very many cases at least dreams are the fulfilment of wishes which cannot be fulfilled while awake. These wishes may belong to the sexual sphere, but not necessarily. Freud and his followers have established a complete table of symbols with regard to this topic, unfortunately almost exclusively for the sexual desires. Freud has also introduced the important concept of *censor*, which means that the obstacles which prevent a wish-fulfilment while awake cause the dream to be symbolic. For all details the reader should go back to the very important works of Freud himself.

Our brief explanation of dreams must suffice here. Other features of dreams are very rare and rather uncertain. The continuation of the same dream on subsequent nights may be mentioned, and it may be added that if this feature were a normal one, we should probably speak of two kinds of *nature*, the "night-nature" and the "day-nature," and should be quite accustomed to "belong" alternately to each of them.

The theory of dreams, then, teaches us that the *I have consciously* exists in two modifica-

tions, alternating according to whether I "sleep" or "am awake." The latter alone shows a continuation of its contents and leads to that concept of empirical reality of which my psychophysical person is a specific member.

ii. *Hypnosis.*

The phenomena of hypnotism, subconsciousness, dissociation and complexes must now be studied together. But we shall lay stress only upon those characteristics that are important for our understanding of the ultimate structure of mind. We shall not study these phenomena in detail with regard to their descriptive and classificatory side, as this part of the matter is quite generally known. A few words only will be devoted to pure description and classification in order to eliminate misunderstanding.

The hypnotic state is not a kind of sleep, for there is sensation, perception and willing during it, though these are limited to a particular field of empirical reality determined in most cases by the hypnotist and by the words spoken by him. The hypnotic state is induced either by suggestion or by auto-suggestion, the first prob-

## 200 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

ably always being reducible to the second and only acting as an important stimulus. What might be called the *emptiness* of consciousness is the prerequisite of the hypnotic state; even this emptiness may originate either by a "suggestion" of somebody else, which is accepted, as it were, and transformed into autosuggestion, or by autosuggestion directly, i.e., by a release of all willing, either directly or by means of looking at a fixed point or into a crystal or in some other way.

The hypnotic state being established, its most general fundamental characteristics are *hyperesthesia*, the *lack of fatigue* with regard to muscular contraction, and great strength of *simple memory*. All other characteristics of hypnosis depends on particular suggestions or autosuggestions, after original general suggestion or autosuggestion has already established that state.

The most important suggestions and autosuggestions of a particular kind may result in purely psychical or in psychophysical phenomena.

Let me give a short classification:

## (1) Physical Phenomena

(i) *Positive hallucinations and illusions*: A flower is seen where there is none (hallucination), a spot on the window is taken for a butterfly, water for wine, potatoes for oysters (illusion).

(ii) *Negative hallucination*: A certain person of a company is neither seen nor heard, though he is present.

(iii) *Imitation*, in a dramatic way, of other persons (Napoleon) or younger states of one's own personality (a child), or even an animal.

(iv) "*Knowing in the form of knowing about alien knowing*," (page 196). The hypnotized person, for instance, often knows about the experiences of his normal state as if this normal state were another personality.

(v) *Suggestive or autosuggestive influence* upon all sorts of "fixed ideas," phobias, bad habits, etc.

(vi) *Posthypnotic suggestion*, i.e., the fact that a suggestion during hypnosis, consisting of a command to perform a certain action after being awakened, is carried out exactly at a fixed time, say at 10:30 a.m. next day, provided that

the action suggested is not too much against the normal "character" of the person in question.

### (2) Psychophysical Phenomena

Suggestive influence upon the healing of wounds, on inflammation, digestion, menstruation, etc. Even the healing process in tuberculosis is said to be influenced by suggestion or immediate autosuggestion; and an ordinary "cold" one has caught may be abolished.

As a rule the person in hypnosis, the *H*-person, as we may call him, knows everything about the same person in his normal state, the *N*-person, either normally or in the form mentioned under (1, iv) but not vice versa, if this is not particularly suggested. An *H*-person in a subsequent state of hypnosis knows about his experiences in all former hypnotic states.

The *H*-state therefore is richer in contents than the *N*-state. But the *N*-state is richer in judgment, i.e., richer with regard to the distinction between what is "true" or not true. We may also say that the *H*-state is one of passivity, the *N*-state one of mental activity.

*iii. Dissociation.*

By *dissociation of the personality* we mean the fact, fortunately rather rare, that two or even more Egos belonging to one soul (and one body) alternate with one another as far as their "waking" state is concerned. Dissociation is mostly the effect of a so-called "shock." Let a mentally normal person be called an *A*-person. Then, in a case of dissociation, there is suddenly a *B*-person, of a very different "character," living his own life. *B* in most cases remembers what *A* has experienced, either in an ordinary way or in the form "as if *A* were somebody else." But *B* may also be absolutely excluded from *A*'s experience. *A*, the original state, never knows anything of *B*, when, later on, he has taken charge again. Let us not forget, however, that even if *A* and *B* are absolutely ignorant of one another, yet their "simple memory," with regard to language, to social institutions, etc., is almost always the same.<sup>9</sup>

<sup>9</sup> There are a few cases in which the *B*-state knows absolutely nothing of *A*'s former life, i.e., does not even possess *A*'s "simple memory." *B*, then, has to learn everything from the beginning, including some language. But such a "psychological baby" learns very quickly.

## 204 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

There are many variations of the phenomenon of dissociation, but what we have said may suffice, and we have only still to add that the *B*-person—or a *C*-person in other cases—may occasionally influence the action of the *A*-person, to the great astonishment of this person himself.

Freud's "complexes" act in a similar way. They are, however, *not* crowned by an Ego, but are *fragments* of conscious contents, as it were. They influence the actions of a normal waking personality, just as one of the latent personalities in real dissociation may do. So much may be said about these strange phenomena in a merely descriptive and classificatory way. For further details the reader should study the works of Janet, Bizet, Freud, Morton Prince, Baudouin, etc.

You will have noticed that almost the same essentials, such as the influence of one Ego upon another, i.e., occur in several of the phenomena in question, and we shall now try to analyse these essentials in full. In doing so we shall take our material, as it comes, from hypnosis, from dissociation, from the action of complexes, and perhaps also from dreams; and some other phe-

nomena, not yet mentioned, such as automatism, will likewise enter into our discussions.

D. *The Causation of Hypnosis and its Essence*  
The first thing to be discussed is the hypnotic state and its causation as such.

The inauguration of the hypnotic state itself is always, strange to say, marked by an act of *will*, or rather by a sequence of two such acts. The first act consists in willing mental passivity or emptiness, the second in willing attention with regard to a very limited field. This field varies in kind, according to whether suggestion or autosuggestion is in question. In the first case attention is directed towards the hypnotist, in the second to a particular idea originating in the mind itself. This difference remains, even if suggestion is completely reducible to autosuggestion. We are told, by Coué and Baudouin in particular, that there must be no *strength* of willing in autosuggestion; that this would have just the reverse effect with regard to the consequences of autosuggestion which are expected. But, in any case, an act of willing stands at the *beginning*; for "to be mentally empty" and then

"to be attentive" must be willed, though it may be true that a strong and decided willing, when directed towards the content of an autosuggestion as such, disturbs the autosuggestive effect.

We know that in willing *I* do not "do" anything. The doing is in my mind (page 35). The will directed towards "becoming hypnotic," then, is an index of a certain state in my mind that sets at work some sort of dynamics in it, of which, firstly, the one-sided attention and, secondly, the hypnotic state are the effects.

The hypnotic state itself, then, can only be characterized as a complex of particular faculties or potencies. In other words, we call a person *hypnotic*, if we know that under certain conditions he will behave in a certain manner. We must not forget that the static and dynamic state of the *soul* is the main thing, and that the conscious phenomena which appear are only a fragmentary index of that state.

The chief characteristics of the soul, while in hypnosis, seem to be great strength of simple memory, on the one hand, and great strength of what in the realm of consciousness is called "conviction" on the other hand. But this con-

viction is of the form of a mere belief, of a very strong form however, and lacks sufficient reasons. In other words it is quite isolated and not related to the whole content of former experience. You may say so, or I say so; and therefore "so it is." That is the general schema. You (or, in case of autosuggestion, I) say that there is a wasp, that I *am* Napoleon, a child, a dog. Therefore I am convinced that there "is" a wasp, or that I really "am" Napoleon, etc. And now the content of the conviction gives origin to particular "determining tendencies" and thus controls the actions of the hypnotized person. *The implanting of determining tendencies without logical control, then, characterizes the hypnotic state more than anything else.*

Let us look back upon what we have said about the dynamics of so-called *willing* in general (page 188).

"*I will a certain end, and my soul knows what is to be done in order to reach that end.*" And what I will either stands in close relation to a particular perception or originates spontaneously on the foundation of the dynamics of my inner mental life.

In suggestion, then, or in autosuggestion, the *end* which I will is either determined by an hallucination or an illusion which is wrongly taken for a "perception," or is originated by the so-called spontaneity of inner mental dynamics in a misled way. The first is the case if, e.g., I take a spot for a wasp and try to avoid it, the second, if, e.g., I believe I "am" a child, or a dog. And the being "misled" in the second case consists in my being "convinced" of a something of which there is no reason to be convinced.

But, exactly as in the case of so-called normality, the being convinced and the willing a certain end in consequence of it, starts the unconscious dynamics of the soul. Here also the soul "knows what is to be done" in order to attain the end. Therefore, it is not the general schema of the dynamics of psychical life that is changed in hypnosis, but the conditions which start those dynamics. It is for this very reason that hypnotic life runs along very fixed and definite lines, in opposition to dreams. It is in some respects like *one long dream*, but the general medium, in the midst of which it occurs, is not that of "sleeping," but of being partially

awake, though in a "wrong" way. All hallucinations, positive or negative, are the effect of this general characteristic.

This, I believe, is a correct analysis of what is meant by suggestion (or autosuggestion) in the narrower sense. We usually apply the word "suggestion" in two different meanings, it seems to me. First of all there is the "suggestion" or autosuggestion of becoming hypnotized at all. This, as we have stated, is a sort of willing, namely, first, to be mentally empty and, after that, to be attentive only in one particular direction. We may call this *primordial suggestion*. The effect of primordial suggestion being realized, *particular suggestion* sets in. That means that a particular "idea" in the form of an absolute conviction, which starts particular determining tendencies, is implanted.

Hypnosis thus means the limitation of the logical faculties combined with an extension of the mnemonic faculties of mind. And this means a disturbance of the mind's dynamic organization in so far as only a fragment of its dynamics is at work, though in a very perfect way. For the enormous extension of *simple* memory in

## 210 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

hypnosis must never be forgotten: We know, for instance, that the hypnotized person may remember poems or even foreign languages that have been long forgotten. On the other hand, something is "forgotten," namely, the totality of experience so far as it is ordered. The enormous extension of simple memory in hypnosis allows us to establish the hypothesis that, at the very bottom, the soul is able to retain *everything* that has ever been experienced during the whole mental life, the great limitation of memory in the normal state being due only to secondary obstacles, whose character is at present unknown.

Does the brain play any rôle here at all? We do not know whether it does or not, as is the case also in regard to other problems.

Kohnstaman<sup>10</sup> was of the opinion that in the deepest state of hypnosis the soul not only knows everything that has ever been experienced in the Ego-form, but also never falls into error. According to him the soul is "perfect" in this state, even with regard to morals.

If this is true, we must of course make a distinction between *two hypnotic states*, the one,

<sup>10</sup> *Journal für Psychologie und Neurologie*, 23.

analysed above, being only a transitory state. The transitory state, then, would be perfect with regard to memory, but imperfect with regard to judgment; the waking state would be imperfect in memory, but rather perfect, though not completely so, with regard to judgment; and the "deep" hypnosis would be perfect in every respect. However, more investigations are required here.

#### E. *Co-consciousness*

We shall now have to deal with two very important concepts of modern psychology: *Co-consciousness* and *subconsciousness*. We analyse so-called *co-consciousness* first. Here we must be rather careful in our terminology, in order not to assume similarities which do not exist.

The term "co-consciousness," in its strict meaning, ought to be given only to the phenomenon of the evident existence of two Egos related to one soul (and body) *at the same time*. Now, being "evident" means nothing more than to be *manifest*. And the question is whether in all cases of so-called co-consciousness there are really two Egos manifesting themselves "at

the same time." In some instances this seems to be the case.

If a hypnotized person experiences a negative hallucination, i.e., does not see a certain person or a certain card in a deck, he will, when very quietly asked, if he *really* does not see, answer just as quietly, or even write the answer down, that "of course" he sees, but that he is not allowed to see! And in fact, a "somebody" with regard to the person in question, a certain *X*, *must* of course experience what the waking person himself does not, this "somebody" being related to the same soul that the waking person is related to. This "somebody" *makes* the waking person *unseeing* and to this extent is subconscious, as we shall state later. But so far as this "somebody" knows *that* he is seeing and makes "the other" *unseeing*, he is co-conscious.

Let me introduce here two terms: *primary action* and *secondary action*. The hypnotized person in his general behavior during his hypnotic state performs primary actions, the "somebody" present while he is quietly speaking or writing performs secondary actions, *using the same body*. The simultaneous occurrence of

waking Ego does not know anything about "his" writing. A very fine case of actual co-consciousness. It differs from the first one insofar as the "primary" person is here a normal waking person, while in the other case the primary person was himself a hypnotized one.

Automatism may also occur in the phenomenon of dissociation. *B*, as a rule, is subconscious with regard to *A* and may perhaps be called only latently co-conscious. But occasionally *B* performs "secondary" actions during the acting of *A*. And in these moments he shows his actual co-consciousness.

On the automatism of so-called "mediums" we shall speak later.

#### F. *Subconsciousness*

Before trying to find out the final basis of co-consciousness, let us study the subconscious state. The final analysis of what here is in question will then be the basis of both phenomena.

Firstly, we find subconsciousness during hypnosis. For negative hallucinations can only be understood on the assumption that "something" prevents the hypnotized person from seeing what

*it sees.* But the "something" is a *somebody*. For he may manifest himself automatically, as we know.

In the phenomena of post-hypnotic suggestion a subconscious somebody is also at work. He is a *somebody*, for he also may wish automatically. From this we may infer that he is a "he" also in cases where no automatism occurs. He "signals" to the primary person what to do and at what time.

In the first case, in negative hallucination, a subconscious Ego was related to a hypnotized *alter Ego*; in the second an Ego is subconscious to a normal Ego.

Subconscious phenomena during dissociation are conscious. The abnormal state *B* may be subconscious to *A*, but never vice versa. And, occasionally, a *C* may be subconscious to both.

We may speak of a subconscious "Ego" here, a real *alter Ego*, in fact, for two reasons. There is, firstly, occasional automatism of the *B*-person performing secondary actions during the presence of the *A*-state; and, secondly, automatism of the *B*-state later on, acting as a waking primary personality, in which he knows about what

he has automatically done while *A* was in the ascendancy.

It seems as if the *B*-state, while latent, knows everything that has happened to *A* during waking in the form of *knowing about another subject's knowing* (page 196). *B*, in fact, regards *A* as another person, much disliked in most cases. And the same is true with regard to a *C* in relation to *B* and *A*, when a third dissociated personality exists.

The complexes of Freud are mere subconscious "somethings"; they are not Egos.

#### G. *The Essence of Co-consciousness and Subconsciousness*

What do the phenomena of co-consciousness and subconsciousness, including all particulars and especially the knowing in the form of "knowing about another subject's knowledge," tell us about the organization of the soul?

The phenomenon of an extension of memory, so common in hypnosis, is not present in dissociation, the *B*-person or the *C*-person being not at all hypnotic personalities. Co-consciousness and subconsciousness, therefore, are not neces-

sarily connected with that extension, though they may be connected, for a subconscious personality may also be an hypnotic one, as is the case in negative hallucinations, where he may even be called "subhypnotic," and in post-hypnotic suggestion.

A subconscious Ego is not the soul in its unconscious totality. Such an Ego is like the normal one with regard to its structure, i.e., it is a rather limited Ego.

But such an Ego is less limited than a thoroughly "normal" Ego, for it knows, when waking, about all the experiences of its companion, though in that complicated form which we may call *dramatic*.

At the first glance it might seem as if we could say that in dissociation *B* sleeps during the presence of *A* and is dreaming of *A*'s experiences. But this would be wrong, for to experience well ordered contents, though in a strange and complicated form, is not to dream.

Of the dreaming of *B* we may only say that if there is a period in which *B* is the primary Ego, just like *A* in other periods, it is really dreaming while sleeping in this period.

A very strange feature, discovered by Morton Prince, is that the *A*- and the *B*-state of a dissociation may be the *same* person when hypnotized. And this hypnotized person, related to both the *A*- and the *B*-state, knows all about the waking life and the dreams of both *A* and *B*, though in the form of knowing about another subject's knowledge. He may be called into waking, and then he is a new personality, *C*, with a "character" different from that of both *A* and *B* and now living his own life. And he keeps all his knowledge about *A* and *B* during this life, always in the strange form mentioned.

#### H. *Summary*

If we attempt to sum up all we know so far about various *states* of the soul, that is, about all that *may* happen to "me" or to "you," to put it in non-technical language, we are entitled to say that the following modifications of such states exist:

- I The Ego in waking
- II The Ego while dreaming
- III The Ego in hypnosis

- IV The hypnotic Ego as co- or subconscious to I
- V The subhypnotic Ego as co- or subconscious to III (negative hallucination)
- VI The Ego as dissociated waking Ego (state A) alternating with another dissociated Ego as an *alter Ego*
- VII The same while sleeping
- VIII The same while hypnotized
- IX The abnormal dissociated Ego in waking alternating with VI
- X The same while dreaming
- XI The same while hypnotized
- XII The same as co- or subconscious to VI
- XIII A third dissociated Ego (state C) alternating with VI and IX, and knowing all, including the dreams, of both, as if they were other subjects
- XIV The same hypnotic stage, which is at the same time the hypnotic stage of VI and IX
- XV The same as co- or subconscious to VI or IX

If we call the *primary-Ego* that Ego-modifi-

cation which is the dominant one during a certain time, we are entitled to say that there certainly is a sequence of various modalities of the primary Ego, the most common of which is the alternative existence of I and II, i.e., of the normal Ego in its waking and sleeping state.

But the states III (hypnotic Ego), VI (dissociated state *A*), VII (the same sleeping), VIII (the same hypnotic), IX (dissociated state *B*), X (the same dreaming) XI (= VIII in Morton Prince's case, i.e., the same hypnotic), XIII (the dissociated state *C*) may also be in alternation with I as main Egos.

The first result, then, is that there is a great variety in the sequence of primary Egos with regard to their modality. This modality must be in some unknown relation to the structure of the soul. It affects quite certainly that part of it which knows itself in the proper *I*-form, immediately known to "me."

Now each modality may at the same time be such that the primary Ego is accompanied by a secondary Ego, for which we also assume the *I*-form, or at least by certain dynamic fragments of contents, the complexes of Freud.

These secondary Egos, or mere complexes, may be real co-Egos, performing secondary actions on the same body, or they may be latent co-Egos, which dynamically affect the main Ego and are called sub-Egos in this case.

The existence of a primary Ego and a secondary Ego at the same time seems to proclaim that the organization of the soul is, in some unknown way, split up into parts or sections, each of them ruling over only a part of the whole storehouse of memory contents. For the memories of the primary Ego and the secondary Ego are certainly separated insofar as the primary Ego is limited, while the secondary Ego may either be limited or be in full possession of memory. There is, then, at least one "fragment" as to memory, or even two. And even if there is only one fragment, namely, the primary Ego, the secondary Ego which is in full possession of memory possesses its memory content in that strange form which is known to us as knowledge in the form of knowing about another subject's knowledge, and which we know already from our analysis of dreams.

Every Ego-form except the normal waking

## 222 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

Ego appears as abnormal, though that Ego-form also is only a fragment with regard to what we call the Ego of the soul, which is unknown to us in its peculiarities, unless it is realized in the “deepest” state of hypnosis as this is described by Kohnstamen (page 210).

The strangest thing of all is the dynamic relation among two coexisting Egos, known as the action of subconsciousness. One of the Egos in this case certainly does not know about the other's existence and contents, and the other, as we have seen, if it knows about the existence and contents of the former at all, knows about it as if a “stranger” were in question.

How is it that there are two spheres of knowing with mutual ignorance or, at least, with one-sided ignorance and one-sided “strangeness” in the same soul, and yet that these spheres may come into causal relations in the second case?

### K. *The Rôle of the Brain*

Does the brain play a rôle here? We do not know. But we do know something about other cases in which there are *many* in the place of *one*.

I refer here to my embryological experiments. If one separates the first two or four cleavage cells of an egg of a sea-urchin or starfish, one gets as many fully developed complete organisms as one has separated cells. Now to each of these organisms belongs a soul; and if one does not like to speak of the "soul" of a sea-urchin, one may assume that the experiment has been carried out with the human egg, which is easily imaginable.

Here, then, we have many Egos related to an amount of matter which, if undisturbed, would have given one organism. However, the conditions here are not quite the same as in the objects of our present purely psychological discussion, since in the embryological experiment there are as many Egos as there are souls, while in the purely psychological realm there is one soul, but many Egos. In any case, however, the embryological results show us that potential mental one-ness *may* result in actual mental many-ness, according to material circumstances.

This, then, seems to suggest that material circumstances also play a rôle in the psychological phenomena in question, and, if they do,

## 224 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

we should certainly be compelled to relate them to the brain. Disturbances in the brain would then seem to be the cause of disturbances in the soul's structure, as in ordinary mental disease (page 149). Of course, we cannot be satisfied with generalities of this kind, but we have nothing else at present.

If, however, we do say that the brain may be responsible in some unknown way for hypnosis, subconsciousness, dissociation and the like, we do not mean to say, of course, that these phenomena depend on brain activities in an essential way. All these features remain *phenomena in the soul*. But it may be that soul activities and forces receive certain data from the brain, and that they act "abnormally" if the data exceed certain limits.

Take, for instance, the two most important characteristics: subconscious influence and knowledge in the form of "knowing about another subject's knowledge." These are quite surely phenomena, which have their foundation in the non-spatial organization of the "unconscious" mind. There is one-sided ignorance combined

with one-sided knowledge yet strangeness, and the stranger is affected, in a very hostile way sometimes, by the one who knows him. All this is the case in the conscious field and on the foundation of one mind. What we have called simple memory (page 203) is mostly common to both partners, as exemplified by langange.

Why is *A* not able to get in touch with the particular contents of *B*, while *B* gets in touch with the contents of *A*, but in that strange "dramatic" form to which we have reference? Functional disturbances of the brain *might* give us the explanation here, just as material disturbances may serve to explain superregeneration in spite of all vitalism.<sup>11</sup>

The theoretical conditions are similar to those which we have encountered above: Memory is certainly not a "faculty" of the brain, but since it is not absolutely perfect in its working, we are obliged to refer to something material for its defects. Ordinary madness requires the same "explanation," for *the soul* cannot be sick, it seems. And now abnormalities or even mere modi-

<sup>11</sup> See p. 148.

## 226 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

fications of "Ego-ness" lead us to the same result, because we are not able to conceive how the soul might modify "Ego-ness" by itself.

But once more it must be stated that reference to the brain, even if we went much more into detail than, unfortunately, we are able to do, would not at all mean that dissociation, hypnosis, dream, co- and subconsciousness have not their essential reason in faculties of the brain with regard to its "organization." We might even conceive all these phenomena under the heading of regulation, so important in biology. The soul, then, would receive data from the brain and would make the best of it.

### L. *Logical Remarks*

From a logical point of view all concepts introduced in this chapter are *necessary* concepts, i.e., concepts necessary in the service of order, as all concepts of analytic science ultimately are. Velocity, force, potential energy, etc., in mechanics, formative stimulus, morphogenetic potency, adaptation, etc., in biology, association, "determining" tendency, subconsciousness, etc., in psychology,—all stand on the same plat-

form. And if some of these concepts seem to be more complex than others, the reason is to be found in objects, but not in anything that is subjective.

In the sphere of empirical reality, then, or of "appearance," a particular subconsciousness *exists* just as well as does a particular potential energy, and, if we allow ourselves to take the step into metaphysics (page 158), both of them equally have their *absolute correlate*.

All concepts of order, of course, must be clearly distinguished from one another and must be carefully applied in the particular case. We hope that we have done this; but we are not of the opinion that it has always been done by other authors. In particular the term "subconscious" is often used rather carelessly.

Subconsciousness is *not* the same as the "unconscious soul" with its primordial dynamic organization. It is a fragment of this organization with reference to particular material contents. Freud's complexes, therefore, may be called subconscious, but that which according to our earlier discussions (page 169) determines the character and talent of a person is not "sub-

## 228 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

conscious," but is *the* unconscious soul in its totality. I fully realize that it may be difficult in particular cases to decide whether it is some subconscious Ego or some fragment of "the" soul that is at work; but theoretically the difference between the two remains.

§ 108. But a more fruitful hypothesis of the same general order is due to the attention directed  
 The Development and Extension of the Conception of Energy. to the conception of *energy*, or capacity for work, by experimental discoveries of the possibility of reciprocal transformations without loss, of motion, heat, electricity, and other processes. The principle of the conservation of energy affirms the quantitative constancy of that which is so transformed, measured, for example, in terms of capacity to move units of mass against gravity. The exponents of what is called "energetics" have in many cases come to regard that the quantity of which is so conserved, as a substantial reality whose forms and distributions compose nature. A contemporary scientist, whose synthetic and dogmatic habit of mind has made him eminent in the ranks of popular philosophy, writes as follows:

"Mechanical and chemical energy, sound and heat, light and electricity, are mutually convertible; they seem to be but different modes of one and the same fundamental force or *energy*. Thence follows the important thesis of the unity of all natural forces, or, as it may also be expressed, the 'monism of energy.'"<sup>8</sup>

<sup>8</sup> Haeckel: *Riddle of the Universe*. Translation by McCabe, p. 254.

The best systematic presentation of "energetics" is to be found in Ostwald's *Vorlesungen über Natur-Philosophie*.

be." The name of a rather famous psychologist is connected with such a "criticism" of hypnosis!

We ourselves, on the foundation of a rather extensive knowledge of literature and of some personal experience as well, are convinced that there *are* parapsychological or "psychical" facts of various kinds. We shall begin with a short classification.

#### 1. CLASSIFICATION

By *telepathy* (Myers) we understand the immediate affection of one mind by another mind, i.e., a kind of affection which does not occur by means of the sense organs in any way. The affecting mind is called the *agent*, the affected one the *percipient*. Telepathy is *spontaneous* if it occurs without the agent's conscious knowing and willing; it is *intentional* if the opposite is the case. The passivity and mere receptivity of the percipient is the chief characteristic of telepathy proper, if compared with the next group of parapsychological phenomena, in which the percipient is active.

*Mind reading* is the acquiring of another subject's knowledge in an immediate way, i.e.,

without any normal sort of communication being given by this subject in the form of speech, facial expression, or any movement whatsoever.

Mind reading and intentional telepathy may be combined, and, in fact, usually are combined in experimental work, the agent consciously trying to give and the percipient to "read," i.e., receive.

By *clairvoyance* we understand the abnormal acquisition of knowledge about facts other than another subject's knowledge, i.e., about material states or conditions. Clairvoyance may relate to the past, the present and probably also the future. In the last case it is called *prophecy*. It may, it seems, also relate to the minute "microscopical" structure of objects, botanical ones, for instance, which are normally seen as total objects only, but which may not be "seen" normally with regard to this structure.

*Telekinesis* is the movement on the part of living persons of material objects without the use of his body organs. *Levitation* is a kind of telekinesis.

Finally, by *materialization* we understand the forming of material structures, mostly of an

## 232 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

"organic" kind, on the part of a living person without using his body in the normal way, i.e., in the way an artist or engineer does, for example.

This is a short classification of the phenomena in question. It might be given in greater detail, as will appear later, but as a rough sort of classification it is sufficient. It is a classification that does not, so far, imply any sort of "theory" except that it excludes the "normal."

### 2. THEORY

#### A. *Generalities*

The first problem, then, is the following: *Who* performs the phenomena in question? Is it the Ego-part of the soul, or the "unconscious" soul in its totality, or a certain subconscious part of the soul?

In spontaneous telepathy, mostly but not always occurring in a period of danger to the life of the agent, as at the moment of his death, it seems that the mind as a whole, and not its proper Ego-part, is at work. In any case a *conscious* "willing" to affect the percipient seems not to be present in the agent, though a strong thought of the affected person may oc-

cur. All these cases are out of control as regards their dynamics, and we are able only to register the fact.

Experimental telepathy, usually combined with intentional mind reading, proves that conscious willing *may* be effective: I "wish" to influence you at a given time, you "wish" to be affected at the same time; and it happens. Clairvoyance, too, may occur during the normal conscious state of the personality who happens to be its subject.

But intentional telepathy as well as mind reading and clairvoyance is, in most cases, and certainly in the most impressive ones, bound to the so-called *trance-state* of a so-called *medium*. The same is true for the physical phenomena of parapsychology, telekinesis and materialization, though these phenomena may occasionally also occur during the conscious waking state of a person.

A *medium* is a person endowed with the faculty of performing *psychical* phenomena. *Trance* is in most cases a state of hypnosis with a particular power of automatism in the form of writing or speaking; it may also be a state of strong

activity of a subconscious Ego during the waking of the primary Ego. The psychical phenomena manifest themselves indirectly, namely, in the meaning of the automatic script or in the words spoken. This meaning tells us about things which the medium cannot know normally, and which, at the same time, reveal to us intentional telepathy, mind reading, clairvoyance or prophecy. The physical phenomena performed by a medium, such as a materialization, appear, of course, quite immediately.

A phenomenon which is above suspicion, but which implies perhaps the greatest enigma of all, is so-called *psychometry*, i.e., the fact that a material object, say a watch that has belonged to a person, living or dead, reveals to the medium particulars about this person.

To sum up, we may say that in any case the unconscious or subconscious sides of the mind are stronger in performing parapsychological phenomena than the Ego-side of the mind.

The mind of a medium, then, has abnormal faculties of acquiring knowledge and of performing actions.

### B. *Physical Phenomena*

As to the "actions," telekinesis, levitation and materialization, they are *actions*, no doubt. They should, as far as materializations are concerned, by no means be taken as creations out of "nothing." Matter is everywhere, and it is only necessary to assume that matter is *ordered*, just as it is in painting a picture or in building a house. But the hands are not used for this ordering.

What *is* used, we do not know. But in normal morphogenesis likewise we do not really know *how* entelechy acts. The paraphysical phenomena are in fact nothing but an enlarged vitalism, a supervitalism, as it were. Matter which has not been under the influence of the vital agent, comes under this influence just as in assimilation.

This is true, at least, for all those paraphysical phenomena which occur in material continuity with the body. And in most materializations, levitations, etc., this is the case.

In most, yet perhaps not in all. But if there is no material continuity with the medium's body rather grave difficulties, of course, arise.

## 236 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

It seems that there are occasionally "appearances" of human forms at a great distance from the medium, and it is also questionable whether *all* levitations or telekineses are performed by abnormal "organs" (as in Crawford's case; for instance) growing out from the medium.

Mere subjective "appearances," of course, do not count. They are hallucinations, though perhaps of a veridical telepathic character. But if the same "appearance" is seen by many persons, even by very neutral ones, the case is different. Very careful and critical investigation must be made here.

### C. *Psychical Phenomena*

In telepathy and mind reading we find a direct dynamic relation between mind and mind *with no material intervention*.

This seems to prove that all mind is one at bottom. This is also a conclusion that is reached along very different ways of reasoning in critical metaphysics. All moral feeling, for instance, is only understandable on this assumption.

While speaking of dissociation and co- or subconsciousness we have learned that there are

many Egos belonging to one soul (and one body), one of which knows about the conscious contents of the others in the form, "*as if they were alien subjects.*"

On the analogy of this fact we may try to understand the matter under discussion. Let us say that the individual minds are parts of one supermind, split up into individual minds, and that under certain unknown conditions one individual mind, *on the foundation of the one supermind*, knows about the contents of other individual minds, just as, in dissociation, one Ego knows about the other Ego's contents. One difference, of course, remains: In dissociation there is only one body, in parapsychological phenomena there are many bodies.

We have stated above that in parapsychology the unconscious mind as a whole, or a subconscious part of it, is more important than the Ego-part of the mind. This view is greatly strengthened by a fact not yet mentioned. In mind reading the percipient—who is the active side here—not only "reads" what the other mind consciously possesses, but also what he has long since "forgotten."

## 238 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

Telepathy, therefore, may be said to rest upon a primordial relation between mind *as a whole* and *mind as a whole* on the foundation of a super-mind and not merely upon a relation between Ego and Ego.

The interpretation of telepathy and mind reading, then, requires no particular hypothesis *ad hoc*, but only the hypothetic extension of the dynamical psychological or metaphysical relations already established. For, to state it once more, there is, firstly, the mutual knowing among dissociated personalities, and, secondly, general metaphysics needs the concept of one supermind for various reasons which have nothing to do with parapsychology.

### D. *Psychophysical Phenomena*

Clairvoyance is much more difficult to understand in principle.

*Knowing* in the form of subject-object is (page 143) a primordial relation in the sphere of the Absolute. As far as the human mind is concerned, it is true only with regard to generalities. It is only the general categorical schema of

*objectivity* that is "innate" to the human mind.<sup>1</sup> In clairvoyance, then, it seems that the relation *knowing* refers to more than mere generalities, at least in a latent innate way; that, virtually at least, the mind is a *miroir de l'univers* in the sense of Leibniz, though only under exceptional conditions and in very exceptional persons does the performance of that "mirror" become conscious in the Ego-form.

Can we accept this theory?

There is one great objection to it, and that is, that under the "mirror" hypothesis reality would seem to be absurd. For there is the phenomena of *error*. Error is not fragmentary knowledge, but apparent knowledge where there is none. Error, therefore, would be very strange, if at the very bottom the mind were omniscient. Or may it be that the pure mind is omniscient, but that its Ego-side is disturbed by the material body? Why, then, is the former connected with the latter? You see, we are at once faced with the great metaphysical and, indeed, great theological problems.

<sup>1</sup> See p. 12.

Let us try another hypothesis, namely, that there is a real *sensation* in clairvoyance, though, of course, a sensation not normally known. Then there might be some sort of "rays" at work, an idea so much favored these days. The hypothesis of unknown rays, affecting unknown organs, is not absolutely absurd here, and the difficulty is only that of explaining why so few persons may be affected by such rays, and these only quite exceptionally. Might it be that the mediums are beings on the way to a higher phylogenetic plane, to the "superman"? But enough of a discussion which borders on the realm of mere phantastics.

Let me say a few words here about the reasons which must prevent us from accepting the theory of "rays" for telepathy and mind reading. I need only summarize the arguments brought forth in a very able manner by Tischner.

If there is a telepathic action, say, in the form of an optic hallucination perceived by the percipient *P* and sent out by the agent *A*, the percipient "sees" his friend in danger, but the agent, though he may consciously think of his friend, certainly does not see *his own* body. Now the

ray theory would have to assume that there is a certain state in the brain of the agent, and that rays going out from his brain affect the brain of the percipient in a corresponding way, as is the case with two tuning forks of the same pitch. But this is impossible on account of the difference in what is consciously or even un- or sub-consciously possessed by the agent and by the percipient. In mind reading, on the other hand, the percipient may *have consciously* what the agent has "forgotten"; and thus here also there cannot be a correspondence of "tuning" in the two brains.

#### E. Prophecy

Prophecy is the greatest enigma of parapsychology. I myself have long hesitated to accept it as a fact, but I have become convinced of its existence by recent literature, on the one hand, and by two very extraordinary cases told me by careful and critical scientists, on the other.

We might go back to the theory of the *miroir de l'univers* here again. The future, then, would be *present* in a certain way, not in the form of

## 242 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

a possible mathematical calculation, but *immediately*. *Time* would be a restriction in the field of appearance, nothing else.

It is useless, however, to say more about a problem which we are sure we *cannot* understand in our present form of mentality. We therefore leave the problem where it stands, and, at the same time, leave parapsychology, with the exception of the spiritualistic hypothesis. About this hypothesis we shall have something to say later on.

Most text-books or essays on psychology do not deal with parapsychology, nor, for that matter, even with "abnormal" normal psychology, such as hypnotism, if a paradoxical expression may be allowed. But it is my opinion that in every science the problematic side is more important for its advancement than the side which is well established and more or less definite. It is for this reason that I have thought it necessary to insert in this book the above "unusual" sections.

## VI

## THE PROBLEM OF FREEDOM

THE word *free* ought to be applied exclusively to an event which is absolutely undetermined, that is to say, to an event which is neither determined by the medium, nor by the past history of the thing in which it occurs, nor by the *essence* of that thing. Bergson uses the word "*liberté*" in this sense. But Spinoza and Kant, when they speak of "freedom," merely wish to assert that an event, say a human action, is not determined by anything outside, or by its past history, but by its own essence exclusively, i.e., by the "intelligible character" (Kant), or by the *sola sua natura* (Spinoza). This sort of so-called "freedom" ought to be called "correspondence to essence," the word freedom being used exclusively to denote radical indeterminism.

The problem of radical indeterminism may be discussed in a general or in a particular way, i.e., either cosmologically or psychologically.

The cosmological problem deals with the phylogenetic process and its continuation, or his-

## 244 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

tory, regarding this process as *one* event in the realm of superpersonality, and asks whether the single phases of that process are determined by the essence of a given superpersonal factor or not. In the latter case every phase of the process would be "made" in freedom. Bergson holds this view and speaks of *God in the making* (*Dieu qui se fait*). I myself have discussed the problem elsewhere with the result that it may be settled insofar as we may really *prove* that it is *insoluble*.<sup>1</sup>

The present volume is concerned, of course, only with psychological freedom, in other words, with the problem of a so-called freedom of will (*liberum arbitrium indifferentiae*).

Ordinary psychology as a particular science, i.e., as part of a *theory of order*, treats the matter very simply, as, indeed, it is allowed to do as long as it remains what it is, namely, a theory of mere order. It simply negates freedom most categorically.

Ordinary psychology argues somewhat as follows:

Firstly: No element, "freedom," is discovered

<sup>1</sup> *Wirklichkeitstheorie*, 2nd edit., 1922, pp. 108 ff.

in the analysis of the phenomenon of *will*, as a conscious possession (page 35), this phenomenon being found to contain only static elements, but no dynamic element.

Secondly: There is moral feeling, in particular conscience or the feeling of responsibility. But this *may* be only a mere index of the rôle which a suprapersonal entity has attributed to the single psychophysical process belonging to its realm. And since moral feeling *may* be conceived in this way, it must be so conceived by ordinary psychology.

Thirdly: Dynamic psychology simply postulates the determination of every mental event, either by previous events in the mind, or by outside stimulation, or by the essence of the soul, and it often actually discovers the determining factors in the form of association affinities, "determining tendencies," etc. In the life of the day we all take the determination of the actions of our fellow men for granted. Post-hypnotic suggestion is a fine instance of a person believing that he is acting according "to his own liking," but really not so acting.

And yet there is one point which is apt to

## 246 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

make us doubtful as to determinism, one which may suggest that at least certain actions may be free, or, at least that man may be free at certain moments of his life. That point is this: The whole phenomenon of *being conscious* would be a *superfluous* element in reality, a mere luxury, if there were no freedom.

In order well to understand what is meant by this statement, let us begin by distinguishing two kinds of *freedom*,—real freedom, of course. Schelling in his later years made such a distinction with regard to the freedom of God in His relation to the world. We shall make use of it with reference to man and his actions.

The first kind of real freedom may be called the freedom of *such*. By this is meant the possibility that there may be contents of willing which originate freely with regard to their quality, this quality being necessitated by absolutely nothing but being “made” as something entirely new. As we have no reason whatever to accept this sort of freedom, we shall not discuss it further.

The second kind of real freedom is the freedom of *that* or of *whether or not*. Under this

heading the contents of will are considered as originating in a necessitated way; they are the effects of the medium, of the past experience of the subject in question, and of the constitution of his soul. But to say *yes* or *no* to them, or perhaps *only* to say *yes* or not to say *yes*—which is not the same!—would mean freedom. And the saying *yes* would be an act of that side of the mind which knows itself in the form of Ego.

At first glance this hypothesis seems to contradict our primordial statement that the Ego is inactive in its very essence, that the Ego only *has consciously*, but does not “do” consciously. But giving the “*yes*”-accent need not necessarily imply real doing in time.

The Ego would say “*yes*” or not say “*yes*” to a content of his will on the basis of the totality of his experience, of course. The Ego would “deliberate.” But, if there is real freedom, the Ego would *not* be *forced* by the deliberation. He would perhaps decide according to certain maxims. But he would *not* be *forced* by these maxims. Feelings on the one hand, intellectuality on the other, would be consulted. But, likewise, there would be no enforcement here.

Only on this assumption would *conscious having*, or, to use a short word we do not much care for, "consciousness," be anything more than a mere luxurious *epiphenomenon*. Without this assumption consciousness would remain an epiphenomenon exactly in the same way as it would on the basis of psychomechanical parallelism, which we have rejected. For all events would be determined by the unconscious side of mental life, and consciousness would only tell us what happens; that would be all.

Now, of course, we may say that the world is what it is, and that consciousness belongs to its essence just as it belongs to the properties of a lobster's body to become red from cooking. But consciousness is such an impressive character of psychophysical life that it is difficult to accept a theory that takes all dynamic importance, all effectiveness, from it.

If, on the other hand, we accept the doctrine of freedom, everything connected with consciousness at once becomes important. Sensation gives us knowledge of the medium or, in the form of pain, for instance, of the state of our body; feelings announce to us the general state of the

soul, whether it is on a good road or handicapped by obstacles, so to speak; thoughts are indexes of the intermediate or final results of its working; the contents of wishing or willing tell us what the soul proposes to perform, in correspondence with the totality of all activities present at a given moment. And all this, in order that *I* may decide, not about *what* there is to do, for this comes before me in the form of contents of my will, but as to *whether or not* "doing" is to happen at all in a certain case.

It is *only* under the *aspect of freedom* that consciousness becomes important, not dynamically, yet *for* the dynamics of the psychophysical life. No other *aspect* is imaginable under which consciousness might become really important; without this aspect we are forced to regard the world from the esthetic point of view exclusively, that is, as a sort of mere theatrical performance.

The contents of conscious feeling, wishing and willing, seem to be still more important than the contents of pure thinking in this respect. To have a thought content is a matter of contemplation, a mere result of a static kind. But to have a feeling, a wish or a will content, is to have

## 250 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

something which, though static in itself, as all *having* is, nevertheless refers to the future, that is, to some sort of *doing*, though not on the *Ego's* part. "The mind is in a good general state," is told me by hope or wishing or joy; "it is in a bad state, distrust its proposals," is announced to me by sorrow. Finally, will contents are signs of an immediate preparedness of the mind, which is only waiting for the signal. Now the *Ego* sets in, overlooking "the whole" of its conscious contents (page 172) and gives *or does not* give the signal in freedom.

I do not say that I have brought forth a real argument in favor of the freedom of will. I have only discussed an *argumentum ad hominem*.

It is for you to decide whether you will accept it or not—and do not forget, at the same time, that the fact of prophecy, rare as it may be, is very much in favor of radical determinism.

It almost seems as if the only "free" act were the freedom to decide about freedom itself! Practically, we all do decide in some way here. Is this decision then really free? Again—we do not know.

Let me still mention a few particulars:

## 252 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

tual and moral perfection may be reached. You *will* this perfection, whenever you will autosuggestion. But man is a "moral" being, moral feeling constituting his "second nature," as the Stoics expressed it. Therefore, if man is a moral being "by nature," the "will to perfection" belongs to his essence: he *must* necessarily will autosuggestion as soon as he knows what he may acquire by its use. And thus man may be a moral automaton! How to avoid this paradox I do not know!

## VII

### IMMORTALITY

THE basic fact, *I have something consciously* is limited in time; it has a beginning and an end. So it is, at least for ordinary experience, with regard to other “subject-points” and therefore, also, most probably for me. What I really know, however, is as follows:

That form of *conscious having* which is my own does not manifest itself any more in my fellow-creatures after a certain time, the end of its manifestation coinciding with the so-called death of their bodies. This is all I really *know*; but, because I know so very little, *immortality* is a “problem.”

What I do *not* know is, whether “end of manifestation” means “end of existence.” This I may know only when my body is dead. But I wish to know at least something about it “now.” It is for this reason that I discuss immortality.

General metaphysics has something to tell us here, but its statements are of such a general

kind that they cannot meet our proper psychological requirements.

Metaphysics tells us that *knowing* is an essential characteristic of reality (page 160), that an essential character cannot be destroyed and that for this reason knowing is eternal. But this does not interest us very much. What we want to know is in what *form* knowing is indestructible, whether in the form of the Ego-person or not, whether combined with a conservation of the contents of personal memory or not, whether in the form of a temporal existence or in the form of a non-temporal one which would not be at all imaginable in a positive way.

Our only help, so far, seems to be vitalistic biology, but even this cannot tell us very much. According to the theory of the autonomy of life, the essential agents responsible for the formation of an organism are not agents working in space and having their starting points in particles of matter, but agents working *into* space, if a paradoxical expression may be permitted. May such agents not also come from "outside time," we may ask, and go into "outside time,"

'equity,' 'mercy,' and the rest of the laws of Nature, are good, that is to say, 'moral virtues'; and their contrary 'vices,' evil."<sup>23</sup>

Jeremy Bentham, the apostle of utilitarianism in the eighteenth century, defined political and social sanctions through which the individual could purchase security and good repute with action conducive to the common welfare. But the nineteenth century has understood the matter better—and the idea of an evolution under conditions that select and reject, is here again the illuminating thought. No individual, evolutionary naturalism maintains, has survived the perils of life without possessing as an inalienable part of his nature, congenital like his egoism, certain impulses and instinctive desires in the interest of the community as a whole. The latest generation of a race whose perpetuation has been conditioned by a capacity to sustain social relations and make common cause against a more external environment, is moral, and does not adopt morality in the course of a calculating egoism. Conscience is the racial instinct of self-preservation uttering itself in the individual member, who draws his very life-blood from the greater organism.

§ 123. This latest word of naturalistic ethics has

<sup>23</sup> Hobbes: *Leviathan*, Chap. XV.

## 256 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

A word must, of course, be said here about the spiritistic<sup>1</sup> theory. Let me say, then, in the first place, that I regard this theory as a thoroughly legitimate one. It is by no means nonsense to assert that the personal soul (or entelechy, if you prefer) survives death and is able to "appear" again under certain conditions, manifesting itself either in a visible form or at least by certain performances. But I do not believe that this hypothesis has yet been proved. We must be very careful, too, about what we admit as "proof" here. As long as we are able to reduce so-called spiritistic phenomena to telepathy, mind reading, clairvoyance, telekinesis or materialization, having their origin in the mind of living persons, we *must* so reduce them, unless fraud can be shown to exist in this connection. It seems to me, however, that there are no spiritistic phenomena known at present which may not be so reduced.

Some authors have said that it is impossible in principle to prove spiritism, since the possi-

<sup>1</sup> The proper English word is "spiritualistic," as I well know. But this word ought to be avoided, as it is too readily accepted in the sense of "idealistic."

bility of *some* sort of parapsychological explanation can *never* be excluded. Take, for instance, the so-called *experimentum crucis* carried out several times by members of the British Society for Psychical Research. The experiment has given negative results so far; but even if there should be a positive result, what would follow from it?

There is the case of a man feeling his death very near. He writes down a poem while quite alone. The poem is put away and officially sealed. The man dies. Some time after his death he seems to speak through the mouth of a medium. He is asked about the poem and the medium writes it down.

Is this a "proof" of the man's personal existence after death? By no means. For the writer poem exists as an empirical object and there is—clairvoyance!

And even if survival should be regarded as proved, we should know nothing about its form, which is what interests us most. Might it not be that the mind of the dead has been absorbed into a suprapersonal Ego, with absolute extinc-

## 260 THE CRISIS IN PSYCHOLOGY

his lifetime. The persons present at the experiments know many of these facts; others they have once known but have long since forgotten; others they have not even known in the past, but there are other living beings, at a great distance perhaps, who know or have known them.

You may find the explanation here on the basis of mind reading, of course, if only you concede that the medium may "read" what has long been forgotten and that she may also "read" in the mind of absent persons quite as she likes.

But the strange thing is that the medium writes all her supranormal acquisitions, coming from very different sources, in such a way that they seem to come from one and the same personality, the dead, who was not even known to the medium in many cases.

The specific *selection* of the singularities from various minds is the one thing, the *unification* into the schema of one personality, the dead, is the other thing that demands explanation. And it has often happened that "the dead" expresses himself with all the characteristics he had in life, that he uses unusual expressions which were

'peculiar to him, that he speaks Greek or Latin,<sup>5</sup> not known to the medium, etc.

I confess that this is to me the strangest phenomenon of all parapsychology and that, in any case, it prevents me from radically rejecting the spiritistic hypothesis in some form. Not rejecting in a radical way and accepting are, however, two different things.

<sup>5</sup> This feature is called *the Classics* by British authors.

## VIII

### CONCLUSIONS

#### 1. THE CRISIS

WE have called this book the “Crisis” in psychology. What, then, are the critical points in this science at present? To explain this means at the same time to give a short summary of most of the essential topics we have discussed.

Speaking literally, *krino* means I decide, and *krisis* means decision. What, then, is decided or is at least on the point of being decided in modern psychology? I believe it is the road which psychology is to follow in the future. And this road depends on certain specific discoveries. We therefore may say that these discoveries mark the critical points in modern psychology and, for this reason, its crisis.

The discoveries I am speaking of are not of the kind that new results in the sciences of nature used to be. They have, in most cases at least, nothing to do with new “facts,” unknown in the

past, though some such new facts are, of course, in question.

The first critical point refers to the theory of elements. There is *meaning* among the elements, i.e., among the elements of the objects which I consciously possess or have; and this meaning appears in various forms: accents of order, accents of truth, accents of the sphere of existence and probably still other kinds of accents, not yet clearly worked out. This topic is still not psychology proper, at least if we call psychology the doctrine of something that is dynamic. It is phenomenological, to use an old word in the sense given to it by Husserl. The *essence* (*essentia*) of certain objects is in question. We do not face a discovery here that is comparable to a discovery in chemistry or in biology. Many people in the past have, of course, seen that there must be elements of meaning. But they have not seen it *clare et distincte*, to use the words of Descartes, but merely in the form of an instinct or intuition. It was for this reason that there were so many "private" psychologies in the past, as we explained in the beginning. Also the fact that association psychology has never ceased to be

an object of dispute proves unmistakably that many people instinctively felt that everything was not "in order" with regard to it, without being able to tell what was still required.

The second critical point relates directly to association psychology itself, and not merely to the materials with which it works. People were aware that enrichment in meaning and in truth was the chief characteristic of mental life and that this feature could not be explained by association. But *how* was it to be explained? Nobody knew satisfactorily. But the formulation—I do not say the "discovery"—of definite limiting and directing agents solves the problem. Association psychology is *really dead* now.

A third critical point was also seen implicitly long ago, but was made out explicitly in our time. This is the existence of the *unconscious*, which is yet psychical and not physical. Leibniz already saw this under the form of the *petite perception*. E. von Hartmann saw it still more clearly, and used it as the basis of his whole philosophic system. But even this great thinker was not able to give an account of it in full. New formulations were necessary in order to do this:

subconsciousness, hypnosis, dissociation, complexes, and the like. We might perhaps be inclined to say that we meet real new discoveries here and not merely new formulations. And this is true with regard to certain details. But in general the "facts" have been known here also for a long time, but were regarded by "scientific" people as a mere swindle or "superstition." We now know that it is not a case of superstition, but of fact. And, what is most important of all, we now realize that what was first regarded as only an exception, as an "abnormality," is in fact quite "normal." For even association or, rather, associative affinity, i.e., the most primitive of all the dynamic agents of the mind, is an *unconscious* agent, only the results of its working being conscious.

The fourth critical point in modern psychology relates to psychophysics. The central problem of psychophysics has become "critical," namely, the *mind-body* problem. Psychomechanical parallelism or epiphenomenalism at one time appeared to be victorious all along the line. But it only "appeared" to be this. There were always some rather important authors who did not ac-

cept it, though they were not able to give sound and convincing reasons for their rejection. Now we have such reasons: The analysis of action as a non-mechanical phenomenon in nature, and the analysis of the manifoldness of "the Psychical" offer them to us. Psychomechanical parallelism will *not* raise its head again.

Last, but not least, there is *psychical research*. In this field alone we have new *facts*, with regard to materialization, for instance, though here also most of what concerns us is only a new analytic formulation of very old things.

All critical topics mentioned so far have one thing in common: They reestablish the popular view of the psychical and of its relation to mechanics. The older psychology, to a great extent at least, had become absolutely alien to mental life as it is experienced by natural men. It "explained" something that did not exist! But modern psychology tries to explain what really is present. The popular view of mental life is *deepened* by it, but not displaced.

A comparison of modern psychology with modern biology is very instructive and impres-

sive. In biology mechanism is overthrown, just as in psychology mere association is overthrown, with all its consequences. The parallel, is, in fact, almost complete: In psychology elements which are not of the "sensible" kind,<sup>1</sup> in biology elements other than material ones. In both, directing agents; in both, the *unconscious*. Finally, all narrows down to one very important point: In modern biology and in modern psychology the concept of the *whole* plays a *fundamental* part, while in the older biology and psychology everything was based upon the concept of *sum* and *resultant*. In the place of the "sum-concepts," *association* and *mechanics*, we now have the "totality-concepts," *soul* and *entelechy*.

In the modern solution of the mind-body problem everything that is new and important in psychology as well as in biology is centered.

## 2. PROBLEMS UNSOLVED

By saying that psychology is at a critical point and sees new roads which it now may follow, we by no means wish to express the opinion that everything in the sphere of mental life is now

<sup>1</sup> *Anschaulich* in German.

settled or solved, at least in principle, and that the psychology of the future can be devoted only to the investigation of details. On the contrary, there are many, indeed, a great many problems in psychology which have not yet reached even the "critical" point, which have not yet passed beyond those "private" and instinctive grounds upon which psychology as a whole rested so long.

The most important of these pre-critical problems of psychology is the psychophysical problem. The rejection of the old parallelistic theory remains in the negative sphere almost entirely. Concerning this problem we know what is not true, but we only know in a very general way what is true. In particular it is the part played by the *brain* that is still very far from clear and very much disputed. There is no strict localization in the brain in the sense of the older theory—but what is there in its place? There is also no "specific energy" in the sense in which Johannes Müller maintains this theory. Nerve stimulation is not only a quantitative but also a qualitative process, but in just what sense it is qualitative, is the question. Why do I "hear," when a certain definite part of the brain is stimu-

lated, and why do I "see," when a stimulus affects another part? What does madness mean? What part is played by the brain in hypnosis and dissociation?

We are absolutely ignorant as regards these questions.

The only way, strange to say, along which definite answers might be possible, would be an experiment carried out by the physiologist or psychologist on *his own* brain. Otherwise we can never know whether there are defects in the essence of mental life or only defects with regard to its bodily expression. The self-experimentator might tell us as to this. But, perhaps also, he might not "tell" us, but would acquire the important knowledge exclusively for himself; then the whole investigation would be indifferent for "science," for science is of a social character and needs communication.

Parapsychology or "psychical research" is, of course, also still in the pre-critical stage, though it is of great advantage to this new branch of science that it coincides in its origin with a period of psychology which is critical in its general aspect. In this field almost everything

that is "theoretical" still remains to be done, though, strange to say, not all parapsychological phenomena offer us an enigma of such an overwhelming kind as pure sensation does. Telepathy and mind reading at least are phenomena of a *simpler* kind than normal sensation, because the brain, most probably, does not take part in them, while clairvoyance may at least be conceived without the interference of the brain. If the brain were required here, the conditions, of course, would be the same as in normal sensation, for then clairvoyance would be "sensation."

The physical phenomena of parapsychology, levitation, materialization, etc., are a mere continuation of biological phenomena, as understood on the *vitalistic* foundation. Only if there were materialization without any continuity with a living body would this not be the case.

Thus most "psychical" phenomena may be understood by known principles which only have to be enlarged in a certain way. It is sensation, pure and simple, that remains the great enigma.

I should not say that *knowing* or *consciously having* is itself an enigma. Here the question of "why?" is simply absurd. "Consciously having"

exists, and this is enough. But within the sphere of knowing we are forced to ask, for example, "why" I *hear* in one case and *see* in another. But a real enigma is present only if we are *forced* to ask and cannot understand. The particulars here<sup>•</sup> are, therefore, more enigmatic than the generality.

What, then, shall be our programme in psychology and psychophysics? It must be that of working in the most critical and analytical manner, studying details most carefully, avoiding generalities which are too easily acquired, looking out for exceptions, since exceptions are the best means of avoiding dogmatism, and investigating abnormalities, not because they are abnormalities, but because they open the field to an understanding of what is normal.

There are, then, many enigmas of a very impressive kind in psychology. But the greatest, though not the most "impressive," of all psychological enigmas stands before every human being, whether psychologist or not, at every moment of his life. And the psychologist has only formulated, so far, that enigma, but has not solved it. It is the enigma of specific sensation.



dependence on mind, for, like the secondary qualities, their content is given only in perception. Hylas is then driven to defend a general material substratum, which is the cause of ideas, but to which none of the definite content of these ideas can be attributed. In short, he has put all the content of knowledge on the one side, and admitted its inseparability from the perceiving spirit, and left the being of things standing empty and forlorn on the other. This amounts, as Philonous reminds him, to the denial of the reality of the known world.

"You are therefore, by your principles, forced to deny the *reality* of sensible things; since you made it to consist in an absolute existence exterior to the mind. That is to say, you are a downright sceptic. So I have gained my point, which was to show your principles led to Scepticism."<sup>10</sup>

§ 131. Having advanced the direct empiricist argument for phenomenalism, Berkeley now gives The Refutation of a Conceived Corporeal World. the rationalistic motive an opportunity to express itself in the queries of Hylas as to whether there be not an "absolute extension," somehow abstracted by thought from the relativities of perception. Is there not at least a *conceivable* world independent of perception?

<sup>10</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 418.

## INDEX

- hypnosis, 199-202; causation and essence of, 205-11
- IMAGES, 27, 29; memory, 65  
imitation, faculty of, 109-11  
immortality, 253 *ff.*  
insanity, 149-52  
instinct, 137, 183  
intensity, increase in, 95-6  
introspection, 7 *ff.*
- JAMES, 4, 258-9  
Jaspers, 168  
Jennings, 186
- KANT, 17, 177, 243  
knowing, 160, 238-9, forms of, 184  
knowledge, 176-7  
Koffka, 62, 80  
Kohnstaman, 210, 222  
Kruger, 34, 190  
Kulpe, 5, 32, 60, 80
- LEIBNIZ, 181, 239, 264  
Levy-Brühl, 185  
Lipps, 107  
local accents, 13
- McDOUGALL, 183  
Marbe, 5, 80  
materialization, 231, 235  
materials, theory of, 6 *ff.*  
meaning, 42; and significance, 5-6, 16, 31, 83  
memory, 225; images, 65;  
simple, 191; specified, 191
- Messer, 80  
mind, 17, 71-2; and body, 115 *ff.*, 153-7; metaphysics of, 158-62; organization of, 163 *ff.*  
mind-body, x  
mind-reading, 230, 236  
Müller, 96-8, 118, 268  
Myers, 230
- NORMAL psychology, x-xi
- OTHER Ego, 8; concept of, 104-14
- PARALLELISM, 115 *ff.*  
parapsychism, 116  
parapsychology, 229-41  
perceptions, 27  
phantasy, 64  
phenomena, physical, 235-6;  
psychical, 236-8, psycho-physical, 238-41  
pleasure and discomfort, 15, 33  
Prince, 204, 218  
prophecy, 241-2  
psychology, causal, 44; crisis in, ix, 262; defined, 2; difficulties in, 26; historical review of, 3 *ff.*, modern, 81-2; "my," 8; new, 83; normal; x-xi; problems in, x, 267-71  
psychical, the, 138 *ff.*  
psychophysics, conception of, 92-3; problems of, 94-103

- QUASI-THINGS, 64-6
- REACTIONS, historical basis  
of, 130-1
- Rehmke, 5
- reproduction, 68-6
- resultant, 132-5
- SAME, the, 123-49
- Scheler, 107, 109
- Selz, 68, 80
- Semon, 123
- sensation and volition, 102-3
- sensations, 27
- sensibility, 27 *ff.*
- significances, 16; abstract,  
18 *ff.*
- soul, the, 75, 78, 169 *ff.*, caus-  
ality of, 77, concept of my,  
70-2, 146; my, 78; my, and  
entelechy, 147; state of my,  
102, 119
- spatiality, 14, 98-9
- Spinoza, 117, 243
- subconsciousness, 214-6,  
essence of, 216-8, 227
- suchnesses, pure, 12 *ff.*
- TELEKINESIS, 231, 235
- telepathy, 230, 232-4, 236-8
- tendency, determining, 61-2,  
67, 72, 182
- text-books, "naïve-realistic"  
basis of, 93-4
- thinking, 56; and willing, 11,  
"over," 40 *ff.*, 56 *ff.*
- Thorndike, 186
- thought, 31 *ff.*
- time, 14
- Tischner, 240
- UNCONSCIOUS, the, x, 47,  
defined, 191-3
- VOLKELT, 108
- von Hartmann, 4, 264
- WATSON, 186
- Weber, 95
- will, 34 *ff.*; analysis of, 35 *ff.*  
centrifugal, 38; centripetal,  
38; dynamics of, 188-90
- willing and doing, 39
- YERKES, 186
- you, the, 109
- you-certainty, 108

universe is composed of private perceptions and ideas. Strictly on the basis of what has preceded, Hylas is justified in regarding this conclusion as no less sceptical than that to which his own position had been reduced; for while he had been compelled to admit that the real is unknowable, Philonous has apparently defined the knowable as relative to the individual. But the supplementary metaphysics which had hitherto been kept in the background is now revealed. It is maintained that though perceptions know no external world, they do nevertheless reveal a spiritual substance of which they are the states. Although it has hitherto been argued that the *esse* of things is in their *percipi*, this is now replaced by the more fundamental principle that the *esse* of things is in their *percipere* or *velle*. The real world consists not in perceptions, but in perceivers. ✓

§ 133. Now it is at once evident that the epistemological theory which has been Berkeley's dialectical weapon in the foregoing argument is no longer available. And those who have cared more for this theory than for metaphysical speculation have attempted to stop at this point, and so to construe phenomenism as to make it self-sufficient on its own

Further Attempts to Maintain Phenomenalism.

grounds. Such attempts are so instructive as to make it worth our while to review them before proceeding with the development of the spiritualistic motive in subjectivism.

The world is to be regarded as made up of sense-perceptions, ideas, or phenomena. What is to be accepted as the fundamental category which gives to all of these terms their subjectivistic significance? So far there seems to be nothing in view save the principle of relativity. The type to which these were reduced was that of the peculiar or unsharable experience best represented by an individual's pleasure and pain. But relativity will not work as a general principle of being. It consigns the individual to his private mind, and cannot provide for the validity of knowledge enough even to maintain itself. Some other course, then, must be followed. Perception may be given a psycho-physical definition, which employs physical terms as fundamental;<sup>12</sup> but this flagrantly contradicts the phenomenalist first principle. Or, reality may be regarded as so stamped with its marks as to insure the proprietorship of thought. But this definition of certain objective entities of

<sup>12</sup> Cf. Pearson: *Grammar of Science*, Chap. II. See above, § 118.

mind, of beings attributed to intelligence because of their intrinsic intelligibility, is inconsistent with empiricism, if indeed it does not lead eventually to a realism of the Platonic type.<sup>13</sup> Finally, and most commonly, the terms of phenomenism have been retained after their original meaning has been suffered to lapse. The "impressions" of Hume, e. g., are the remnant of the Berkeleyan world with the spirit stricken out. There is no longer any point in calling them impressions, for they now mean only elements or qualities. As a consequence this outgrowth of the Berkeleyanism epistemology is at present merging into a realistic philosophy of experience.<sup>14</sup> Any one, then, of these three may be the last state of one who undertakes to remain exclusively faithful to the phenomenistic aspect of Berkeleyanism, embodied in the principle *esse est percipi*.

<sup>13</sup> See Chap. XI. Cf. also § 140.

<sup>14</sup> The same may be said of the "permanent possibilities of sensation," proposed by J. S. Mill. Such possibilities outside of actual perception are either nothing or things such as they are known to be *in* perception. In either case they are not perceptions.

In Ernst Mach's *Analysis of Sensations*, the reader will find an interesting transition from sensationalism to realism through the substitution of the term *Bestandtheil* for *Empfindung*. (See Translation by Williams, pp. 18-20.) See below, § 207.

Berkeley's Spiritualism. Immediate Knowledge of the Perceiver.

§ 134. Let us now follow the fortunes of the other phase of subjectivism—that which develops the conception of the perceiver rather than the perceived. When Berkeley holds that

"all the choir of heaven and furniture of the Earth, in a word, all those bodies which compose the mighty frame of the world, have not any subsistence without a Mind,"

his thought has transcended the epistemology with which he overthrew the conception of material substance, in two directions. For neither mind of the finite type nor mind of the divine type is perceived. But the first of these may yet be regarded as a direct empirical datum, even though sharply distinguished from an object of perception. In the third dialogue, Philonous thus expounds this new kind of knowledge:

"I own I have properly no *idea*, either of God or any other spirit; for these being active, cannot be represented by things perfectly inert, as our ideas are. I do nevertheless know that I, who am a spirit or thinking substance, exist as certainly as I know my ideas exist. Farther, I know what I mean by the terms *I* and *myself*; and I know this immediately or intuitively, though I do not perceive it as I perceive a triangle, a color, or a sound."<sup>15</sup>

<sup>15</sup> Berkeley: *Op. cit.*, p. 447.

The knowledge here provided for may be regarded as empirical because the reality in question is an individual present in the moment of the knowledge. Particular acts of perception are said directly to reveal not only perceptual objects, but perceiving subjects. And the conception of spiritual substance, once accredited, may then be extended to account for social relations and to fill in the nature of God. The latter extension, in so far as it attributes such further predicates as universality and infinity, implies still a third epistemology, and threatens to pass over into rationalism. But the knowledge of one's fellow-men may, it is claimed, be regarded as immediate, like the knowledge of one's self. Perceptual and volitional activity has a sense for itself and also a sense for other like activity. The self is both self-conscious and socially conscious in an immediate experience of the same type.

§ 135. But this general spiritualistic conception is developed with less singleness of purpose in

Schopenhauer's Spiritualism, or Voluntarism.  
Immediate Knowledge of the Will.

Berkeley than among the *voluntarists* and *panpsychists* who spring from Schopenhauer, the orientalist, pessimist, and mystic among the German Kantians of the early nineteenth century. His great

book, "Die Welt als Wille und Vorstellung," opens with the phenomenalist contention that "the world is my idea." It soon appears, however, that the "my" is more profoundly significant than the "idea." Nature is my creation, due to the working within me of certain fixed principles of thought, such as space, time, and causality. But nature, just because it is my creation, is less than me: is but a manifestation of the true being for which I must look *within* myself. But this inner self cannot be made an object of thought, for that would be only to create another term of nature. The will itself, from which such creation springs, is "that which is most immediate" in one's consciousness, and "makes itself known in a direct manner in its particular acts." The term *will* is used by Schopenhauer as a general term covering the whole dynamics of life, instinct and desire, as well as volition. It is that sense of life-preserving and life-enhancing appetency which is the conscious accompaniment of struggle. With its aid the inwardness of the whole world may now be apprehended.

"Whoever has now gained from all these expositions a knowledge *in abstracto*, and therefore clear and certain, of what everyone knows directly *in concreto*, i. e., as

feeling, a knowledge that his will is the real inner nature of his phenomenal being, . . . and that his will is that which is most immediate in his consciousness, . . . will find that of itself it affords him the key to the knowledge of the inmost being of the whole of nature; for he now transfers it to all those phenomena which are not given to him, like his own phenomenal existence, both in direct and indirect knowledge, but only in the latter, thus merely one-sidedly as *idea* alone.”<sup>18</sup>

The heart of reality is thus known by an “intuitive interpretation,” which begins at home in the individual’s own heart.

§ 136. The panpsychist follows the same course of reflection. There is an outwardness and an inwardness of nature, corresponding to the knower’s body on the one hand, and his feeling or will on the other. With this principle in hand one may pass down the whole scale of being and discover no breach of continuity. Such an interpretation of nature has been well set forth by a contemporary writer, who quotes the following from the botanist, C. v. Naegeli:

“Sensation is clearly connected with the reflex actions of higher animals. We are obliged to concede it to the other animals also, and we have no grounds for denying it to plants and inorganic bodies. The sensation arouses in us a condition of comfort and discomfort. In general,

<sup>18</sup> Schopenhauer *The World as Will and Idea*. Translation by Haldane and Kemp, Vol. I, p 141.

the feeling of pleasure arises when the natural impulses are satisfied, the feeling of pain when they are not satisfied. Since all material processes are composed of movements of molecules and elementary atoms, pleasure and pain must have their seat in these particles. . . . Thus the same mental thread runs through all material phenomena. The human mind is nothing but the highest development on our earth of the mental processes which universally animate and move nature.”<sup>17</sup>

According to panpsychism, then, physical nature is the manifestation of an *appetency or bare consciousness generalized from the thinker's awareness of his most intimate self*. Such appetency or bare consciousness is the essential or substantial state of that which appears as physical nature.

§ 137. We must now turn to the efforts which this doctrine has made to maintain itself against

The Inherent Difficulty in Spiritualism. No Provision for Objective Knowledge. the sceptical trend of its own epistemology. For precisely as in the case of phenomenism its dialectical principle threatens to be self-destructive.

Immediate presence is still the test of knowledge. But does not immediate presence connote relativity and inadequacy, at best; an initial phase of knowledge that must be supplemented and cor-

<sup>17</sup> Quoted from Naegeli: *Die Mechanisch-physiologische Theorie der Abstammungslehre*, by Friedrich Paulsen, in his *Introduction to Philosophy*. Translation by Thilly, p. 103.

rected before objective reality and valid truth are apprehended? Does not the individuality of the individual thinker connote the very maximum of error? Indeed, spiritualism would seem to have exceeded even Protagoreanism itself, and to have passed from scepticism to deliberate nihilism. The object of knowledge is no longer even, as with the phenomenalist, the thinker's thought, but only his *thinking*. And if the thinker's thought is relative to him, then the thinker's act of thinking is the very vanishing-point of relativity, the negative term of a negating relation. How is a real, a self-subsistent world to be composed of such? Impelled by a half-conscious realization of the hopelessness of this situation, the exponent of spiritualism has sought to universalize his conception; to define an *absolute or ultimate spirit* other than the individual thinker, though known in and through him. But it is clear that this development of spiritualism, like all of the speculative procedure of subjectivism, threatens to exceed the scope of the original principle of knowledge. There is a strong presumption against the possibility of introducing a knowledge of God by the way of the particular presentations of an individual consciousness.

§ 138. Schopenhauer must be credited with a genuine effort to accept the metaphysical consequences of his epistemology. His epistemology, as we have seen, defined knowledge as centripetal. The object of real knowledge is identical with the subject of knowledge. If I am to know the universal will, therefore, I must in knowing become that will. And this Schopenhauer maintains. The innermost heart of the individual into which he may retreat, even from his private will, is—the universal. But there is another way of arriving at the same knowledge. In contemplation I may become absorbed in principles and laws, rather than be diverted by the particular spacial and temporal objects, until (and this is peculiarly true of the æsthetic experience) my interest no longer distinguishes itself, but coincides with truth. In other words, abstract thinking and pure willing are not opposite extremes, but adjacent points on the deeper or transcendent circle of experience. One may reach this part of the circle by moving in either of two directions that at the start are directly opposite: by turning in upon the subject or by utterly giving one's self up to the object. Reality obtains no definition by this means. Phi-

Schopen-  
hauer's At-  
tempt to  
Universalize  
Subjectivism.  
Mysticism.

losophy, for Schopenhauer, is rather a programme for realizing the state in which I will the universal and know the universal will. The final theory of knowledge, then, is mysticism, reality directly apprehended in a supreme and incommunicable experience, direct and vivid, like perception, and at the same time universal, like thought. But the empiricism with which Schopenhauer began, the appeal to a familiar experience of self as will, has meanwhile been forgotten. The idea as object of my perception, and the will as its subject were in the beginning regarded as common and verifiable items of experience. But who, save the occasional philosopher, knows a universal will? Nor have attempts to avoid mysticism, while retaining Schopenhauer's first principle, been successful. Certain voluntarists and panpsychists have attempted to do without the universal will, and define the world solely in terms of the many individual wills. But, as Schopenhauer himself pointed out, individual wills cannot be distinguished except in terms of something other than will, such as space and time. The same is true if for will there be substituted inner feeling or consciousness. Within this category individuals can be distinguished only as points of view, which to be comparable at all must

contain common objects, or be defined in terms of a system of relations like that of the physical world or that of an ethical community. The conception of pure will or pure feeling inevitably attaches to itself that of an undivided unity, if for no other reason because there is no ground for distinction. And such a unity, a will or consciousness that is no particular act or idea, can be known only in the unique experience which mysticism provides.

§ 139. The way of Schopenhauer is the way of one who adheres to the belief that what the thinker knows must always be a part of himself, his state or his activity. From this point of view the important element of being, its very essence or substance, is not any definable nature but an immediate relation to the knower. The consequence is that the universe in the last analysis can only be defined as a supreme state or activity into which the individual's consciousness may develop. Spiritualism has, however, other interests, interests which may be quite independent of epistemology. It is speculatively interested in a kind of being which it defines as spiritual, and in terms of which it proposes to define the universe. Such procedure is radically different from the

Objective  
Spiritualism.

epistemological criticism which led Berkeley to maintain that the *esse* of objects is in their *percipi*, or Schopenhauer to maintain that "the world is my idea," or that led both of these philosophers to find a deeper reality in immediately intuited self-activity. For now it is proposed to understand spirit, discover its properties, and to acknowledge it only where these properties appear. I may now know spirit as an object; which in its properties, to be sure, is quite different from matter, but which like matter is capable of subsisting quite independently of my knowledge. This is a metaphysical spiritualism quite distinct from epistemological spiritualism, and by no means easily made consistent therewith. Indeed, it exhibits an almost irrepressible tendency to overstep the bounds both of empiricism and subjectivism, an historical connection with which alone justifies its introduction in the present chapter.

§ 140. To return again to the instructive example of Bishop Berkeley, we find him proving God from the evidence of him in experience, or the need of him to support the claims of experience.

"But, whatever power I may have over my own thoughts, I find the ideas actually perceived by Sense

have not a like dependence on *my* will. When in broad daylight I open my eyes, it is not in my power to choose whether I shall see or no, or to determine what particular objects shall present themselves to my view: and so likewise as to the hearing and other senses; the ideas imprinted on them are not creatures of *my* will. There is therefore some other Will or Spirit that produces them.

The ideas of Sense are more strong, lively, and distinct than those of the Imagination; they have likewise a steadiness, order, and coherence, and are not excited at random, as those which are the effects of human wills often are, but in a regular train or series—the admirable connection whereof sufficiently testifies the wisdom and benevolence of its Author. Now the set rules, or established methods, wherein the Mind we depend on excites in us the ideas of Sense, are called *the laws of nature*.<sup>18</sup>

Of the attributes of experience here in question, independence or “steadiness” is not regarded as *prima facie* evidence of spirit, but rather as an aspect of experience for which some cause is necessary. But it is assumed that the power to “produce,” with which such a cause must be endowed, is the peculiar prerogative of spirit, and that this cause gives further evidence of its spiritual nature, of its eminently spiritual nature, in the orderliness and the goodness of its effects.

“The force that produces, the intellect that orders, the goodness that perfects all things is the Supreme Being.”<sup>19</sup>

<sup>18</sup> Berkeley: *Op. cit.*, p. 273.

<sup>19</sup> *Op. cit.*, Vol. I, pp. 272-273.

That spirit is possessed of causal efficacy, Berkeley has in an earlier passage proved by a direct appeal to the individual's sense of power.

"I find I can excite ideas in my mind at pleasure, and vary and shift the scene as oft as I think fit. It is no more than *willing*, and straightway this or that idea arises in my fancy; and by the same power it is obliterated and makes way for another. This making and unmaking of ideas doth very properly denominate the mind active. Thus much is certain and grounded on experience: but when we talk of unthinking agents, or of exciting ideas exclusive of volition, we only amuse ourselves with words."<sup>20</sup>

Although Berkeley is here in general agreement with a very considerable variety of philosophical views, it will be readily observed that this doctrine tends to lapse into mysticism whenever it is retained in its purity. Berkeley himself admitted that there was no "idea" of such power. And philosophers will as a rule either obtain an idea corresponding to a term or amend the term—always excepting the mystical appeal to an inarticulate and indefinable experience. Hence pure power revealed in an ineffable immediate experience tends to give place to kinds of power to which some definite meaning may be attached. The energy of physics, defined by measurable quan-

<sup>20</sup> *Op. cit.*, Vol. III, p. 278.

The former strain appears in his conclusion that "the *principles* of science are neither objects of sense nor imagination; and that intellect and reason are alone the sure guides to truth."<sup>21</sup> His transcendentalism appears in his belief that such principles, participating in the vital unity of the Individual Purpose, constitute the meaning and so the substantial essence of the universe.

§ 141. Such then are the various paths which lead from subjectivism to other types of philosophy, demonstrating the peculiar aptitude of the former for departing from its first principle. Beginning with the relativity of all knowable reality to the individual knower, it undertakes to conceive reality in one or the other of the terms of this relation, as particular state of knowledge or as individual subject of knowledge. But these terms develop an intrinsic nature of their own, and become respectively *empirical datum*, and *logical* or *ethical principle*. In either case the subjectivistic principle of knowledge has been abandoned. Those whose speculative interest in a definable objective world has been less strong than their attachment to this principle, have either accepted the imputation of scepticism,

The General  
Tendency of  
Subjectivism  
to Transcend  
Itself.

<sup>21</sup> *Op. cit.*, Vol. III, p. 249.

or had recourse to the radical epistemological doctrine of mysticism.

§ 142. Since the essence of subjectivism is epistemological rather than metaphysical, its practical and religious implications are various. The ethical theories which are corollary to the tendencies expounded above, range from extreme egoism to a mystical universalism. The close connection between the former and relativism is evident, and the form of egoism most consistent with epistemological relativism is to be found among those same Sophists who first maintained this latter doctrine. If we may believe Plato, the Sophists sought to create for their individual pupils an *appearance* of good. In the "Theaetetus," Socrates is represented as speaking thus on behalf of Protagoras:

"And I am far from saying that wisdom and the wise man have no existence; but I say that the wise man is he who makes the evils which are and appear to a man, into goods which are and appear to him. . . . I say that they (the wise men) are the physicians of the human body, and the husbandmen of plants—for the husbandmen also take away the evil and disordered sensations of plants, and infuse into them good and healthy sensations as well as true ones; and the wise and good rhetoricians make the good instead of the evil seem just to states; for whatever appears to be just and fair to a state, while

sanctioned by a state, is just and fair to it; but the teacher of wisdom causes the good to take the place of the evil, both in appearance and in reality.”<sup>22</sup>

As truth is indistinguishable from the appearance of truth to the individual, so good is indistinguishable from a particular seeming good. The supreme moral value according to this plan of life is the agreeable feeling tone of that dream world to which the individual is forever consigned. The possible perfection of an experience which is “reduced to a swarm of impressions,” and “ringed round” for each one of us by a “thick wall of personality” has been brilliantly depicted in the passage already quoted from Walter Pater, in whom the naturalistic and subjectivistic motives unite.<sup>23</sup> If all my experience is strictly my own, then my good must likewise be my own. And if all of my experience is valid only in its instants of immediacy, then my best good must likewise consist in some “exquisite passion,” or stirring of the senses.

§ 143. But for Schopenhauer the internal world opens out into the boundless and unfathomable sea of the universal will. If I re-Self-denial. tire from the world upon my own pri-

<sup>22</sup> Plato: *Theaetetus*, 167. Translation by Jowett.

<sup>23</sup> See § 121.

vate feelings, I am still short of the true life, for I am asserting myself against the world. I should seek a sense of unison with a world whose deeper heart-beats I may learn to feel and adopt as the rhythm of my own. The folly of willing for one's private self is the ground of Schopenhauer's pessimism.

"All *willing* arises from want, therefore from deficiency, and therefore from suffering. The satisfaction of a wish ends it; yet for one wish that is satisfied there remain at least ten which are denied. Further, the desire lasts long, the demands are infinite; the satisfaction is short and scantily measured out. But even the final satisfaction is itself only apparent; every satisfied wish at once makes room for a new one, both are illusions; the one is known to be so, the other not yet. No attained object of desire can give lasting satisfaction, but merely a fleeting gratification; it is like the alms thrown to the beggar, that keeps him alive to-day that his misery may be prolonged till the morrow. . . . The subject of willing is thus constantly stretched on the revolving wheel of Ixion, pours water into the sieve of the Danaids, is the ever-longing Tantalus."<sup>24</sup>

The escape from this torture and self-deception is possible through the same mystical experience, the same blending with the universe that conditions knowledge.

§ 144. But though pleasant dreaming be the

<sup>24</sup> Schopenhauer: *Op. cit.* Translation by Haldane and Kemp, Vol. I, pp. 253-254.

most consistent practical sequel to a subjectivistic epistemology, its *individualism* presents another basis for life with quite different possibilities of emphasis. It may develop into an aggressive egoism of the type represented by the sophist Thrasymachus, in his proclamation that "might is right, justice the interest of the stronger."<sup>25</sup> But more commonly it is tempered by a conception of social interest, and serves as the champion of action against contemplation. The gospel of action is always individualistic. It requires of the individual a sense of his independence, and of the real virtue of his initiative. Hence those voluntarists who emphasize the many individual wills and decline to reduce them, after the manner of Schopenhauer, to a universal, may be said to afford a direct justification of it. It is true that this practical realism threatens the tenability of an epistemological idealism, but the two have been united, and because of their common emphasis upon the individual such procedure is not entirely inconsequential. Friedrich Paulsen, whose panpsychism has already been cited, is an excellent case in point. The only good, he maintains, is "welfare," the fulfilment of those natural

\* See Plato: *Republic*, Bk. I, 338.

desires which both distinguish the individual and signify his continuity with all grades of being.

"The goal at which the will aims does not consist in a maximum of pleasurable feelings, but in the normal exercise of the vital functions for which the species is predisposed. In the case of man the mode of life is on the whole determined by the nature of the historical unity from which the individual evolves as a member. Here the objective content of life, after which the will strives, also enters into consciousness with the progressive evolution of presentation; the type of life becomes a conscious ideal of life."<sup>28</sup>

Here, contrary to the teaching of Schopenhauer, the good consists in individual attainment, the extension and fulfilment of the *distinct* interests that arise from the common fund of nature. To be and to do to the uttermost, to realize the maximum from nature's investment in one's special capacities and powers—this is indeed the first principle of a morality of action.

§ 145. But a type of ethics still further removed from the initial relativism has been adopted <sup>The Ethical</sup> and more or less successfully assimilated by subjectivistic philosophies. Community. Accepting Berkeley's spirits, with their indefinite capacities, and likewise the stability of the ideal principles that underlie a God-administered world,

\* Paulsen. *Op. cit.*, p. 423.

and morality becomes the obedience which the individual renders to the law. The individual, free to act in his own right, coöperates with the purposes of the general spiritual community, whose laws are worthy of obedience though not coercive. The recognition of such a spiritual citizenship, entailing opportunities, duties, and obligations, rather than thraldom, partakes of the truth as well as the inadequacy of common-sense.

§ 146. As for religion, at least two distinct practical appreciations of the universe have been historically associated with this chapter in philosophy. The one of these is the mysticism of Schopenhauer, the religious sequel to a universalistic voluntarism. Schopenhauer's ethics, his very philosophy, is religion. For the good and the true are alike attainable only through identification with the Absolute Will. This consummation of life, transcending practical and theoretical differences, engulfing and effacing all qualities and all values, is like the Nirvâna of the Orient—a positive ideal only for one who has appraised the apparent world at its real value.

"Rather do we freely acknowledge that what remains after the entire abolition of will is for all those who are still full of will certainly nothing, but, conversely, to

those in whom the will has turned and has denied itself, this our world, which is so real, with all its suns and milky-ways—is nothing.”<sup>27</sup>

§ 147. From the union of the two motives of voluntarism and individualism springs another <sup>The Religion of Individual Coöperation with God.</sup> and a more familiar type of religion, that of coöperative spiritual endeavor. In the religion of Schopenhauer the soul must utterly lose itself for the sake of peace; here the soul must persist in its own being and activity for the sake of the progressive goodness of the world. For Schopenhauer God is the universal solution, in which all motions cease and all differences disappear; here God is the General of moral forces. The deeper and more significant universe is

“a society of rational agents, acting under the eye of Providence, concurring in one design to promote the common benefit of the whole, and conforming their actions to the established laws and order of the Divine parental wisdom: wherein each particular agent shall not consider himself apart, but as the member of a great City, whose author and founder is God: in which the civil laws are no other than the rules of virtue and the duties of religion: and where everyone’s true interest is combined with his duty.”<sup>28</sup>

<sup>27</sup> Schopenhauer: *Op. cit.* Translation by Haldane and Kemp, p. 532.

<sup>28</sup> Berkeley: *Op. cit.*, Vol. II, p. 138.

But so uncompromising an optimism is not essential to this religion. Its distinction lies rather in its acceptance of the manifest plurality of souls, and its appeal to the faith that is engendered by service.<sup>29</sup> As William James has said:

"Even God's being is sacred from ours. To coöperate with his creation by the best and rightest response seems all he wants of us. In such cooperation with his purposes, not in any chimerical speculative conquest of him, not in any theoretical drinking of him up, must lie the real meaning of our destiny."<sup>30</sup>

<sup>29</sup> For an interesting characterization of this type of religion, cf. Royce: *Spirit of Modern Philosophy*, p. 46.

<sup>30</sup> James: *The Will to Believe*, p. 141.

## CHAPTER X

### ABSOLUTE REALISM<sup>1</sup>

§ 148. No one has understood better than the philosopher himself that he cannot hope to be popu-

The Philoso- lar with men of practical common-  
pher's Task, sense. Indeed, it has commonly been  
and the Philosopher's a matter of pride with him. The  
Object, or the Absolute. classic representation of the philoso-  
pher's faith in himself is to be found in Plato's  
“Republic.” The philosopher is there portrayed  
in the famous cave simile as one who having seen  
the light itself can no longer distinguish the  
shadows which are apparent to those who sit per-  
petually in the twilight. Within the cave of  
shadows he is indeed less at his ease than those  
who have never seen the sun. But since he knows  
the source of the shadows, his knowledge surrounds

<sup>1</sup> By *Absolute Realism* is meant that system of philosophy which defines the universe as the *absolute being*, implied in knowledge as its final object, but assumed to be independent of knowledge. In the *Spinozistic* system this absolute being is conceived under the form of *substance*, or self-sufficiency; in *Platonism* under the form of *perfection*; and in the *Aristotelian* system under the form of a *hierarchy of substances*.

that of the shadow connoisseurs. And his equanimity need not suffer from the contempt of those whom he understands better than they understand themselves. The history of philosophy is due to the dogged persistence with which the philosopher has taken himself seriously and endured the poor opinion of the world. But the pride of the philosopher has done more than perpetuate the philosophical outlook and problem; it has led to the formulation of a definite philosophical conception, and of two great philosophical doctrines. The conception is that of the *absolute*; and the doctrines are that of the *absolute being*, and that of the *absolute self* or *mind*. The former of these doctrines is the topic of the present chapter.

Among the early Greeks the rôle of the philosopher was one of superlative dignity. In point of knowledge he was less easily satisfied than other men. He thought beyond immediate practical problems, devoting himself to a profounder reflection, that could not but induce in him a sense of superior intellectual worth. The familiar was not binding upon him, for his thought was emancipated from routine and superficiality. Furthermore his intellectual courage and resolution did not permit him to indulge in triviality, doubt,

or paradox. He sought his own with a faith that could not be denied. Even Heraclitus the Dark, who was also called "the Weeping Philosopher," because he found at the very heart of nature that transiency which the philosophical mind seeks to escape, felt himself to be exalted as well as isolated by that insight. But this sentiment of personal aloofness led at once to a division of experience. He who knows truly belongs to another and more abiding world. As there is a philosophical way of thought, there is a philosophical way of life, and a *philosophical object*. Since the philosopher and the common man do not see alike, the terms of their experience are incommensurable. In Parmenides the Eleatic this motive is most strikingly exhibited. There is a *Way of Truth* which diverges from the *Way of Opinion*. The philosopher walks the former way alone. And there is an object of truth, accessible only to one who takes this way of truth. Parmenides finds this object to be the content of pure affirmation.

"One path only is left for us to speak of, namely, that *It is*. In it are very many tokens that what is, is uncreated and indestructible, alone, complete, immovable, and without end. Nor was it ever, nor will it be; for now *it is*, all at once, a continuous one."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>2</sup> Burnet: *Early Greek Philosophy*, p. 185.

The philosophy of Parmenides, commonly called the Eleatic Philosophy, is notable for this emergence of the pure concept of *absolute being* as the final object of knowledge. The philosopher aims to discover that which is, and so turns away from that which is not or that which ceases to be. The negative and transient aspects of experience only hinder him in his search for the eternal. It was the great Eleatic insight to realize that the outcome of thought is thus predetermined; that the answer to philosophy is contained in the question of philosophy. The philosopher, in that he resolutely avoids all partiality, relativity, and superficiality, must affirm a complete, universal, and ultimate being as the very object of that perfect knowledge which he means to possess. This object is known in the history of these philosophies as the *infinite* or *absolute*.<sup>3</sup>

§ 149. The Eleatic reasons somewhat as follows. The philosopher seeks to know what is. The Eleatic Conception of Being. The object of his knowledge will then contain as its primary and essential predicate, that of being. It is a step further to define being in terms of this essential predicate.

<sup>3</sup> When contrasted with the temporal realm of "generation and decay," this ultimate object is often called the *eternal*.

Parmenides thinks of being as a power or strength, a positive self-maintenance to which all affirmations refer. The remainder of the Eleatic philosophy is the analysis of this concept and the proof of its implications. Being must persist through all change, and span all chasms. Before being there can be only nothing, which is the same as to say that so far as being is concerned there is no before. Similarly there can be no after or beyond. There can be no motion, change, or division of being, because being will be in all parts of every division, and in all stages of every process. Hence being is "uncreated and indestructible, alone, complete, immovable, and without end."

The argument turns upon the application to being as a whole of the meaning and the implications of *only being*. Being is the affirmative or positive. From that *alone*, one can derive only such properties as eternity or unity. For generation and decay and plurality may belong to that which is *also* affirmative and positive, but not to that which is affirmative and positive *only*. The Eleatic philosophy is due, then, to the determination to derive the whole of reality from the bare necessity of being, to cut down reality to what flows entirely from the assertion of its only known nec-

essary aspect, that of being. We meet here in its simplest form a persistent rationalistic motive, the attempt to derive the universe from the isolation and analysis of its most universal character. As in the case of every well-defined philosophy, this motive is always attended by a "besetting" problem. Here it is the accounting for what, empirically at least, is alien to that universal character. And this difficulty is emphasized rather than resolved by Parmenides in his designation of a limbo of opinion, "in which is no true belief at all," to which the manifold of common experience with all its irrelevancies can be relegated.

§ 150. The Eleatic philosophy, enriched and supplemented, appears many centuries later in the Spinoza's rigorous rationalism of Spinoza.<sup>4</sup> With Conception of Substance. Spinoza philosophy is a demonstration of necessities after the manner of geometry. Reality is to be set forth in theorems derived from fundamental axioms and definitions. As in the case of Parmenides, these necessities are the implications of the very problem of being. The philosopher's problem is made to solve itself. But for Spinoza that problem is more definite and more pregnant. The problematic being must not

<sup>4</sup> Holland, 1632-1677.

only be, but must be *sufficient to itself*. What the philosopher seeks to know is primarily an intrinsic entity. Its nature must be independent of other natures, and my knowledge of it independent of my knowledge of anything else. Reality is something which need not be sought further. So construed, being is in Spinoza's philosophy termed *substance*. It will be seen that to define substance is to affirm the existence of it, for substance is so defined as to embody the very qualification for existence. Whatever exists exists under the form of substance, as that "which is in itself, and is conceived through itself: in other words, that of which a conception can be formed independently of any other conception."<sup>5</sup>

§ 151. There remains but one further fundamental thesis for the establishment of the Spinoza's Proof of God, the Infinite Substamce. Modes and the Attributes. zistic philosophy, the thesis which maintains the exclusive existence of the one "absolutely infinite being," or God. The exclusive existence of God follows from his existence, because of the exhaustiveness of his nature. His is the nature "consisting in infinite attributes, of which each expresses eternal and infinite essentiality." He will contain all

<sup>5</sup> Spinoza: *Ethics*, Part I. Translation by Elwes, p. 45.

meaning, and all possible meaning, within his fixed and necessary constitution. It is evident that if such a God exist, nothing can fall outside of him. One such substance must be the only substance. But upon what grounds are we to assert God's existence?

To proceed further with Spinoza's philosophy we must introduce two terms which are scarcely less fundamental in his system than that of substance. The one of these is "attribute," by which he means *kind* or general property; the other is "mode," by which he means *case* or individual thing. Spinoza's proof of God consists in showing that no single mode, single attribute, or finite group of modes or attributes, can be a substance; but only an infinite system of all modes of all attributes. Translated into common speech this means that neither kinds nor cases, nor special groups of either, can stand alone and be of themselves, but only the unity of all possible cases of all possible kinds.

The argument concerning the possible substantiality of the case or individual thing is relatively simple. Suppose an attribute or kind, *A*, of which there are cases  $am_1$ ,  $am_2$ ,  $am_3$ , etc. The number of cases is never involved in the nature of the

kind, as is seen for example in the fact that the definition of triangle prescribes no special number of individual triangles. Hence  $am_1$ ,  $am_2$ ,  $a.n_3$ , etc., must be explained by something outside of their nature. Their being cases of *A* does not account for their existing severally. This is Spinoza's statement of the argument that individual events, such as motions or sensations, are not self-dependent, but belong to a context of like events which are mutually dependent.

The question of the attribute is more difficult. Why may not an attribute as a complete domain of interdependent events, itself be independent or substantial? Spinoza's predecessor, Descartes, had maintained precisely that thesis in behalf of the domain of thought and the domain of space. Spinoza's answer rests upon the famous ontological argument, inherited from scholasticism and generally accepted in the first period of modern philosophy. The evidence of existence, he declares, is clear and distinct conceivability.

"For a person to say that he has a clear and distinct—that is, a true—idea of a substance, but that he is not sure whether such substance exists, would be the same as if he said that he had a true idea, but was not sure whether or no it was false."<sup>6</sup>

<sup>6</sup> *Ibid.*, p. 49.

Now we can form a clear and distinct idea of an absolutely infinite being that shall have all possible attributes. This idea is a well-recognized standard and object of reference for thought. But it is a conception which is highly qualified, not only through its clearness and distinctness, but also through its abundance of content. It affirms itself therefore with a certainty that surpasses any other certainty, because it is supported by each and every other certainty, and even by the residuum of possibility. If any intelligible meaning be permitted to affirm itself, so much the more irresistible is the claim of this infinitely rich meaning. Since every attribute contributes to its validity, the being with infinite attributes is infinitely or absolutely valid. The conclusion of the argument is now obvious. If the being constituted by the infinite attributes exists, it swallows up all possibilities and exists exclusively.

§ 152. The vulnerable point in Spinoza's argument can thus be expressed: that which is important is questionable, and that which is unquestionable is of doubtful importance. Have I indeed a clear and distinct idea of an absolutely infinite being? The answer turns upon the meaning of the

The Limits of Spinoza's Argument for God.

phrase "idea of." It is true I can add to such meaning as I apprehend the thought of possible other meaning, and suppose the whole to have a definiteness and systematic unity like that of the triangle. But such an idea is problematic. I am compelled to use the term "possible," and so to confess the failure of definite content to measure up to my idea. My idea of an absolutely infinite being is like my idea of a universal language: I can think *of* it, but I cannot *think it out*, for lack of data or because of the conflicting testimony of other data. If I mean the infinity of my being to be a term of inclusiveness, and to insist that the all must be, and that there can be nothing not included in the all, I can scarcely be denied. But it is reasonable to doubt the importance of such a truth. If, on the other hand, I mean that my infinite being shall have the compactness and organic unity of a triangle, I must admit that such a being is indeed problematic. The degree to which the meaning of the part is dependent upon the meaning of the whole, or the degree to which the geometrical analogy is to be preferred to the analogy of aggregates, like the events within a year, is a problem that falls quite outside Spinoza's fundamental arguments.

§ 153. But the advance of Spinoza over the Eleatics must not be lost sight of. The modern philosopher has so conceived being as to provide for parts within an individual unity. The geometrical analogy is a most illuminating one, for it enables us to understand how manyness may be indispensable to a being that is essentially unitary. The triangle as triangle is one. But it could not be such without sides and angles. The unity is equally necessary to the parts, for sides and angles of a triangle could not be such without an arrangement governed by the nature triangle. The whole of nature may be similarly conceived: as the reciprocal necessity of *natura naturans*, or nature defined in respect of its unity, and *natura naturata*, or nature specified in detail. There is some promise here of a reconciliation of the *Way of Opinion* with the *Way of Truth*. Opinion would be a gathering of detail, truth a comprehension of the intelligible unity. Both would be provided for through the consideration that whatever is complete and necessary must be made up of incompletenesses that are necessary to it.

§ 154. This consideration, however, does not receive its most effective formulation in Spinoza.

The isolation of the parts, the actual severality and irrelevance of the modes, still presents a grave Transition to problem. Is there a kind of whole to Teleological Conceptions, which not only parts but fragments, or parts in their very incompleteness, are indispensable? This would seem to be true of a *progression* or *development*, since that would require both perfection as its end, and degrees of imperfection as its stages. Spinoza was prevented from making much of this idea by his rejection of the principle of *teleology*. He regarded appreciation or valuation as a projection of personal bias. "Nature has no particular goal in view," and "final causes are mere human figments." "The perfection of things is to be reckoned only from their own nature and power."<sup>7</sup> The philosophical method which Spinoza here repudiates, the interpretation of the world in moral terms, is *Platonism*, an independent and profoundly important movement, belonging to the same general realistic type with Eleaticism and Spinozism. Absolute being is again the fundamental conception. Here, however, it is conceived that being is primarily not affirmation or self-sufficiency, but the *good* or *ideal*. There are few great metaphysical systems that have not

<sup>7</sup> *Ibid.*, pp. 77, 81.

been deeply influenced by Platonism; hence the importance of understanding it in its purity. To this end we must return again to the early Greek conception of the philosopher; for Platonism, like Eleaticism, is a sequel to the philosopher's self-consciousness.

§ 155. Although the first Greek philosophers, such men as Thales, Heraclitus, Parmenides, and

Early Greek Philosophers not Self-critical. Empedocles, were clearly aware of their distinction and high calling, it by no means follows that they were good judges of themselves. Their sense of intellectual power was unsuspecting; and they praised philosophy without definitely raising the question of its meaning. They were like unskilled players who try all the stops and scales of an organ, and know that somehow they can make a music that exceeds the noises, monotones or simple melodies of those who play upon lesser instruments. They knew their power rather than their instrument or their art. The first philosophers, in short, were self-conscious but not self-critical.

§ 156. The immediately succeeding phase in the history of Greek philosophy was a curtailment, but

only in the most superficial sense a criticism, of the activity of the philosopher. In the Periclean Age philosophy suffered more from inattention than from refutation. The scepticism of the sophists, who were the knowing men of this age, was not so much conviction as indisposition. They failed to recognize the old philosophical problem; it did not *appeal* to them as a genuine problem. The sophists were the intellectual men of an age of *humanism*, *individualism*, and *secularism*. These were years in which the circle of human society, the state with its institutions, citizenship with its manifold activities and interests, bounded the horizon of thought. What need to look beyond? Life was not a problem, but an abundant opportunity and a sense of capacity. The world was not a mystery, but a place of entertainment and a sphere of action. Of this the sophists were faithful witnesses. In their love of novelty, irreverence, impressionism, elegance of speech, and above all in their praise of individual efficiency, they preached and pandered to their age. Their public, though it loved to abuse them, was the greatest sophist of them all—brilliant and capricious, incomparably rich in all but wisdom. The majority belonged to what

Plato called "the sight-loving, art-loving, busy class." This is an age, then, when the man of practical common-sense is preeminent, and the philosopher with his dark sayings has passed away. The pride of wisdom has given way to the pride of power and the pride of cleverness. The many men pursue the many goods of life, and there is no spirit among them all who, sitting apart in contemplation, wonders at the meaning of the whole.

§ 157. But in their midst there moved a strange prophet, whom they mistook for one of themselves.

Socrates and the Self-criticism of the Philosopher. Socrates was not one who prayed in the wilderness, but a man of the streets and the market-place, who talked rather more incessantly than the rest, and apparently with less right. He did not testify to the truth, but pleaded ignorance in extenuation of an exasperating habit of asking questions. There was, however, a humor and a method in his innocence that arrested attention. He was a formidable adversary in discussion from his very irresponsibility; and he was especially successful with the more rhetorical sophists because he chose his own weapons, and substituted critical analysis, question and answer, for the long speeches to which these teachers were habituated by their profession. He appeared to

be governed by an insatiable inquisitiveness, and a somewhat malicious desire to discredit those who spoke with authority.

But to those who knew him better, and especially to Plato, who knew him best, Socrates was at once the sweetest and most compelling spirit of his age. There was a kind of truth in the quality of his character. He was perhaps *the first of all reverent men*. In the presence of conceit his self-depreciation was ironical, but in another presence it was most genuine, and his deepest spring of thought and action. This other presence was his own ideal. Socrates was sincerely humble because, expecting so much of philosophy, he saw his own deficiency. Unlike the unskilled player, he did not seek to *make* music; but he loved music, and knew that such music as is indeed music was beyond his power. On the other hand he was well aware of his superiority to those in whom self-satisfaction was possible because they had no conception of the ideal. Of such he could say in truth that they did not know enough even to realize the extent of their ignorance. The world has long been familiar with the vivid portrayal of the Socratic consciousness which is contained in Plato's "Apology." Socrates had set out in life with the opinion

that his was an age of exceptional enlightenment. But as he came to know men he found that after all no one of them really knew what he was about. Each "sight-loving, art-loving, busy" man was quite blind to the meaning of life. While he was capable of practical achievement, his judgments concerning the real virtue of his achievements were conventional and ungrounded, a mere reflection of tradition and opinion. When asked concerning the meaning of life, or the ground of his opinions, he was thrown into confusion or aggravated to meaningless reiteration. Such men, Socrates reflected, were both unwise and confirmed in their folly through being unconscious of it. Because he knew that vanity is vanity, that opinion is indeed mere opinion, Socrates felt himself to be the wisest man in a generation of dogged unwisdom.

§ 158. It is scarcely necessary to point out that this insight, however negatively it be used, is a revelation of positive knowledge. Heracitus and Parmenides claimed to know; Socrates disclaimed knowledge <sup>Socrates's Self-criticism a Prophecy of Truth.</sup> for reasons. Like all real criticism this is at once a confounding of error and a prophecy of truth. The truth so discovered is indeed not ordinary

truth concerning historical or physical things, but not on that account less significant and necessary. This truth, it will also be admitted, is virtually rather than actually set forth by Socrates himself. He knew that life has some meaning which those who live with conviction desire at heart to realize, and that knowledge has principles with which those who speak with conviction intend to be consistent. There is, in short, a rational life and a rational discourse. Furthermore, a rational life will be a life wisely directed to the end of the good; and a rational discourse one constructed with reference to the real natures of things, and the necessities which flow from these natures. But Socrates did not conclusively define either the meaning of life or the form of perfect knowledge. He testified to the necessity of some such truths, and his testimony demonstrated both the blindness of his contemporaries and also his own deficiency.

§ 159. The character and method of Socrates have their best foil in the sophists, but their bearing on the earlier philosophers is <sup>The Historical Preparation for Plato.</sup> for our purposes even more instructive. Unlike Socrates these philosophers had not made a study of the task of the philosopher. They *were* philosophers—"spectators of all time and all ex-

istence"; but they were precritical or dogmatic philosophers, to whom it had not occurred to define the requirements of philosophy. They knew no perfect knowledge other than their own actual knowledge. They defined being and interpreted life without reflecting upon the quality of the knowledge whose object is being, or the quality of insight that would indeed be practical wisdom. But when through Socrates the whole philosophical prospect is again revealed after the period of humanistic concentration, it is as an ideal whose possibilities, whose necessities, are conceived before they are realized. Socrates celebrates the rôle of the philosopher without assigning it to himself. The new philosophical object is the philosopher himself; and the new insight a knowledge of knowledge itself. These three types of intellectual procedure, dogmatic speculation concerning being, humanistic interest in life, and the self-criticism of thought, form the historical preparation for Plato, the philosopher who defined being a the ideal of thought, and upon this ground interpreted life.

There is no more striking case in history of the subtle continuity of thought than the relation between Plato and his master Socrates. The wonder of it is due to the absence of any formula-

tion of doctrine on the part of Socrates himself. He only lived and talked; and yet Plato created a system of philosophy in which he is faithfully embodied. The form of embodiment is the dialogue, in which the talking of Socrates is perpetuated and conducted to profounder issues, and in which his life is both rendered and interpreted. But as the vehicle of Plato's thought preserves and makes perfect the Socratic method, so the thought itself begins with the Socratic motive and remains to the end an expression of it. The presentiment of perfect knowledge which distinguished Socrates from his contemporaries becomes in Plato the clear vision of a realm of ideal truth.

§ 160. Plato begins his philosophy with the philosopher and the philosopher's interest. The Platonism: philosopher is a lover, who like all lovers longs for the beautiful. But he is Reality as the Absolute Ideal or Good. the supreme lover, for he loves not the individual beautiful object but the Absolute Beauty itself. He is a lover too in that he does not possess, but somehow apprehends his object from afar. Though imperfect, he seeks perfection; though standing like all his fellows in the twilight of half-reality, he faces toward the sun. Now it is the fundamental proposition of the Pla-

tonic philosophy that reality is the sun itself, or the perfection whose possession every wise thinker covets, whose presence would satisfy every longing of experience. The real is that beloved object which is "truly beautiful, delicate, perfect, and blessed." There is both a serious ground for such an affirmation and an important truth in its meaning. The ground is the evident incompleteness of every special judgment concerning experience. We understand only in part, and we know that we understand only in part. What we discover is real enough for practical purposes, but even common-sense questions the true reality of its objects. Special judgments seem to terminate our thought abruptly and arbitrarily. We give "the best answer we can," but such answers do not come as the completion of our thinking. Our thought is in some sense surely a seeking, and it would appear that we are not permitted to rest and be satisfied at any stage of it. If we do so we are like the sophists—blind to our own ignorance. But it is equally true that our thought is straightforward and progressive. We are not permitted to return to earlier stages, but must push on to that which is not less, but more, than what we have as yet found. There is good hope, then, of understanding what

the ideal may be from our knowledge of the direction which it impels us to follow.

But to understand Plato's conception of the progression of experience we must again catch up the Socratic strain which he weaves into every theme. For Socrates, student of life and mankind, all objects were objects of interest, and all interests practical interests. One is ignorant when one does not know the good of things; opinionative when one rates things by conventional standards; wise when one knows their real good. In Platonism this practical interpretation of experience appears in the principle that the object of perfect knowledge is *the good*. The nature of things which one seeks to know better is the good of things, the absolute being which is the goal of all thinking is the very good itself. Plato does not use the term good in any merely utilitarian sense. Indeed it is very significant that for Plato there is no cleavage between theoretical and practical interests. To be morally good is to know the good, to set one's heart on the true object of affection; and to be theoretically sound is to understand perfection. The good itself is the end of every aim, that in which all interests converge. Hence it cannot be defined, as might a special good, in

terms of the fulfilment of a set of concrete conditions, but only in terms of the sense or direction of all purposes. The following passage occurs in the "Symposium":

"The true order of going or being led by others to the things of love, is to use the beauties of earth as steps along which he mounts upward for the sake of that other beauty, going from one to two, and from two to all fair forms, and from fair forms to fair actions, and from fair actions to fair notions, until from fair notions he arrives at the notion of absolute beauty, and at last knows what the essence of beauty is."<sup>8</sup>

§ 161. There is, then, a "true order of going," and an order that leads from one to many, from  
The Progression of Experience toward God thence to forms, from thence to morality, and from thence to the general objects of thought or *the ideas*. In the "Republic," where the proper education of the philosopher is in question, it is proposed that he shall study arithmetic, geometry, astronomy, and dialectic. Thus in each case mathematics is the first advance in knowledge, and dialectic the nearest to perfection. Most of Plato's examples are drawn from mathematics. This science replaces the variety and vagueness of the forms of experience with *clear, unitary, definite, and eternal natures*,

<sup>8</sup> Plato: *Symposium*, 211 Translation by Jowett.

such as the number and the geometrical figure. Thus certain individual things are approximately triangular, but subject to alteration, and indefinitely many. On the other hand the triangle as defined by geometry is the fixed and unequivocal nature or idea which such experiences suggest; and the philosophical mind will at once pass to it from these. But the mathematical objects are themselves not thoroughly understood when understood only in mathematical terms, for the foundations of mathematics are arbitrary. And the same is true of all the so-called special sciences. Even the scientists themselves, says Plato,

"only dream about being, but never can behold the waking reality so long as they leave the hypotheses they use unexamined, and are unable to give an account of them. For when a man knows not his own first principle, and when the conclusion and intermediate steps are also constructed out of he knows not what, how can he imagine that such a conventional statement will ever become science?"\*

Within the science of dialectics we are to understand the connections and sequences of ideas themselves, in the hope of eliminating every arbitrariness and conventionality within a system of truth that is pure and self-luminous rationality. To

\* Plato: *Republic*, 533. Translation by Jowett.

this science, which is the great interest of his later years, Plato contributes only incomplete studies and experiments. We must be satisfied with the playful answer with which, in the "Republic," he replies to Glaucon's entreaty that "he proceed at once from the prelude or preamble to the chief strain, and describe that in like manner": "Dear Glaucon, you will not be able to follow me here, though I would do my best."

But a philosophical system has been projected. The real is that perfect significance or meaning which thought and every interest suggests, and toward which there is in experience an appreciable movement. It is this significance which makes things what they really are, and which constitutes our understanding of them. In itself it transcends the steps which lead to it; "for God," says Plato, "mingles not with men." But it is nevertheless the meaning of human life. And this we can readily conceive. The last word may transform the sentence from nonsense into sense, and it would be true to say that its sense mingles not with nonsense. Similarly the last touch of the brush may transform an inchoate mass of color into a picture, disarray into an object of beauty; and its beauty mingles not with ugliness. So life,

when it finally realizes itself, obtains a new and incommensurable quality of perfection in which humanity is transformed into deity. There is frankly no provision for imperfection in such a world. In his later writings Plato sounds his characteristic note less frequently, and permits the ideal to create a cosmos through the admixture of matter. But in his moment of inspiration, the Platonist will have no sense for the imperfect. It is the darkness behind his back, or the twilight through which he passes on his way to the light. He will use even the beauties of earth only "as steps along which he mounts upward for the sake of that other beauty."

§ 162. We have met, then, with two distinct philosophical doctrines which arise from the conception of the *absolute*, or the philosopher's peculiar object: the doctrine of the *absolute being* or *substance*, and that of the *absolute ideal* or *good*. Both doctrines are realistic in that they assume reality to be demonstrated or revealed, rather than created, by knowledge. Both are rationalistic in that they develop a system of philosophy from the problem of philosophy, or deduce a definition of reality.

Aristotle's Hierarchy of Substances in Relation to Platonism.

from the conception of reality. There remains a third doctrine of the same type—the philosophy of Aristotle, the most elaborately constructed system of Greek antiquity, and the most potent influence exerted upon the Scholastic Philosophy of the long mediæval period. This philosophy was rehabilitated in the eighteenth century by Leibniz, the brilliant librarian of the court of Hanover. The extraordinary comprehensiveness of Aristotle's philosophy makes it quite impossible to render here even a general account of it. There is scarcely any human discipline that does not to some extent draw upon it. We are concerned only with the central principles of the metaphysics.

Upon the common ground of rationalism and realism, Plato and Aristotle are complementary in temper, method, and principle. Plato's is the genius of inspiration and fertility, Aristotle's the genius of erudition, mastery, and synthesis. In form, Plato's is the gift of expression, Aristotle's the gift of arrangement. Plato was born and bred an aristocrat, and became the lover of the best—the uncompromising purist; Aristotle is middle-class, and limitlessly wide, hospitable, and patient in his interests. Thus while both are speculative and acute, Plato's mind is intensive

objects that ascends toward it. The highest perfection, or God, is not itself coextensive with being, but the final cause of being—that on account of which the whole progression of events takes place. Reality is the development with all of its ascending stages from the maximum of potentiality, or matter, to the maximum of actuality, or God the pure form.

§ 163. To understand the virtue of this philosophy as a basis for the reconciliation of different interests, we must recall the relation between Plato and Spinoza. Their characteristic difference appears to the best advantage in connection with mathematical truth. Both regarded geometry as the best model for philosophical thinking, but for different reasons. Spinoza prized geometry for its necessity, and proposed to extend it. His philosophy is the attempt to formulate a geometry of being, which shall set forth the inevitable certainties of the universe. Plato, on the other hand, prized geometry rather for its definition of types, for its knowledge of pure or perfect natures such as the circle and triangle, which in immediate experience are only approximated. His philosophy defines reality similarly as the absolute

The Aristotelian Philosophy as a Reconciliation of Platonism and Spinozism.

perfection. Applied to nature Spinozism is mechanical, and looks for necessary laws, while Platonism is teleological, and looks for adaptation and significance. Aristotle's position is intermediate. With Plato he affirms that the good is the ultimate principle. But this very principle is conceived to govern a universe of substances, each of which maintains its own proper being, and all of which are reciprocally determined in their changes. Final causes dominate nature, but work through efficient causes. Reality is not pure perfection, as in Platonism, nor the indifferent necessity, as in Spinozism, but the system of beings necessary to the complete progression toward the highest perfection. The Aristotelian philosophy promises, then, to overcome both the hard realism of Parmenides and Spinoza, and also the supernaturalism of Plato.

§ 164. But it promises, furthermore, to remedy the defect common to these two doctrines, the very Leibniz's Ap- besetting problem of this whole type of plication of the Conception philosophy. That problem, as has been of Develop- ment to the seen, is to provide for the imperfect Problem of Imperfection. within the perfect, for the temporal incidents of nature and history within the eternal being. Many absolutist philosophers have de-

clared the explanation of this realm to be impossible, and have contented themselves with calling it the realm of opinion or appearance. And this realm of opinion or appearance has been used as a proof of the absolute. Zeno, the pupil of Parmenides, was the first to elaborate what have since come to be known as the paradoxes of the empirical world. Most of these paradoxes turn upon the infinite extension and divisibility of space and time. Zeno was especially interested in the difficulty of conceiving motion, which involves both space and time, and thought himself to have demonstrated its absurdity and impossibility.<sup>10</sup> His argument is thus the complement of Parmenides's argument for the indivisible and unchanging substance. Now the method which Zeno here adopts may be extended to cover the whole realm of nature and history. We should then be dialectically driven from this realm to take refuge in absolute being. But the empirical world is not destroyed by disparagement, and cannot long lack champions even among the absolutists themselves. The reconciliation of nature and history with the absolute being became the special interest of Leibniz, the great modern Aristotelian. As a scientist and

<sup>10</sup> See Burnet: *Op. cit.*, pp. 322-333.

man of affairs, he was profoundly dissatisfied with Spinoza's resolution of nature, the human individual, and the human society into the universal being. He became an advocate of individualism while retaining the general aim and method of rationalism.

Like Aristotle, Leibniz attributes reality to individual substances, which he calls "monads"; and like Aristotle he conceives these monads to compose an ascending order, with God, the monad of monads, as its dominating goal.

"Furthermore, every substance is like an entire world and like a mirror of God, or indeed of the whole world which it portrays, each one in its own fashion; almost as the same city is variously represented according to the various situations of him who is regarding it. Thus the universe is multiplied in some sort as many times as there are substances, and the glory of God is multiplied in the same way by as many wholly different representations of his works."<sup>11</sup>

The very "glory of God," then, requires the innumerable finite individuals with all their characteristic imperfections, that the universe may lack no possible shade or quality of perspective.

§ 165. But the besetting problem is in fact not

<sup>11</sup> Leibniz: *Discourse on Metaphysics*. Translation by Montgomery, p. 15.

In so far as the monads are spiritual this doctrine tends to be subjectivistic. Cf. Chap. IX.

solved, and is one of the chief incentives to that other philosophy of absolutism which defines an absolute spirit or mind. Both Aristotle and Leibniz undertake to make the perfection which determines the order of the hierarchy of substances, at the same time the responsible author of the whole hierarchy. In this case the dilemma is plain.<sup>1</sup> If the divine form or the divine monad be other than the stages that lead up to it, these latter cannot be essential to it, for God is by definition absolutely self-sufficient. If, on the other hand, God is identical with the development in its entirety, then two quite incomensurable standards of perfection determine the supremacy of the divine nature, that of the whole and that of the highest parts of the whole. The union of these two and the definition of a perfection which may be at once the development and its goal, is the task of absolute idealism.

§ 166. Of the two fundamental questions of epistemology, absolute realism answers the one explicitly, the other implicitly. As respects the source of the most valid knowledge, Parmenides, Plato, Aristotle, Spinoza are all agreed: true knowledge is

the work of reason, of pure intellection. Plato is the great exponent of dialectic, or the reciprocal affinities and necessities of ideas. Aristotle is the founder of deductive logic. Spinoza proposes to consider even "human actions and desires" as though he were "concerned with lines, planes, and solids." Empirical data may be the occasion, but cannot be the ground of the highest knowledge. According to Leibniz,

"it seems that necessary truths, such as we find in pure mathematics, and especially in arithmetic and geometry, must have principles whose proof does not depend upon instances, nor, consequently, upon the witness of the senses, although without the senses it would never have come into our heads to think of them."<sup>12</sup>

§ 167. The answers which these philosophies give to the question of *the relation between the state of knowledge and its object*, divide them into two groups. Among the <sup>The Relation of Thought and its Object</sup> <sub>in Absolute Realism.</sub> clients reason is regarded as the means of emancipation from the limitations of the private mind. "The sleeping turn aside each into a world of his own," but "the waking"—the wise men—"have one and the same world." What the individual knows belongs to himself only in so

<sup>12</sup> Leibniz: *New Essays on the Human Understanding*. Translation by Latta, p. 363.

far as it is inadequate. Hence for Plato the ideas are not the attributes of a mind, but that self-subsistent truth to which, in its moments of insight, a mind may have access. Opinion is "my own," the truth is being. The position of Aristotle is equally clear. "Actual knowledge," he maintains, "is identical with its object."

Spinoza and Leibniz belong to another age. Modern philosophy began with a new emphasis upon self-consciousness. In his celebrated argument—"I think, hence I am" (*cogito ergo sum*)—Descartes established the independent and substantial reality of the thinking activity. The "I think" is recognized as in itself a fundamental being, known intuitively to the thinker himself. Now although Spinoza and Leibniz are finally determined by the same motives that obtain in the cases of Plato and Aristotle, they must reckon with this new distinction between the thinker and his object. The result in the case of Spinoza is the doctrine of "parallelism," in which mind is defined as an "infinite attribute" of substance, an aspect or phase coextensive with the whole of being. The result in the case of Leibniz is his doctrine of "representation" and "pre-established harmony," whereby each monadic substance is in

itself an active spiritual entity, and belongs to the universe through its knowledge of a specific stage of the development of the universe. But both Spinoza and Leibniz subordinate such conceptions as these to the fundamental identity that pervades the whole. With Spinoza the attributes belong to the same absolute substance, and with Leibniz the monads represent the one universe. And with both, finally, the perfection of knowledge, or the knowledge of God, is indistinguishable from its object, God himself. The epistemological subtleties peculiar to these philosophers are not stable doctrines, but render inevitable either a return to the simpler and bolder realism of the Greeks, or a passing over into the more radical and systematic doctrine of absolute idealism.

§ 168. We have met with two general motives, both of which are subordinated to the doctrine of  
The Stoic and an absolute being postulated and sought  
Spinozistic by philosophy. The one of these mo-  
Ethics of Necessity. tives leads to the conception of the ab-  
solutely necessary and immutable substance, the  
other to the conception of a consummate per-  
fection. There is an *interpretation of life* appropri-  
ate to each of these conceptions. Both agree in

regarding life seriously, in defining reason or philosophy as the highest human activity, and in emphasizing the identity of the individual's good with the good of the universe. But there are striking differences of tone and spirit.

Although the metaphysics of the Stoics have various affiliations, the Stoic code of morality is the true practical sequel to the Eleatic-Spinozistic view of the world. The Stoic is one who has set his affections on the eternal being. He asks nothing of it for himself, but identifies himself with it. The saving grace is a sense of reality. The virtuous man is not one who remakes the world, or draws upon it for his private uses; even less one who rails against it, or complains that it has used him ill. He is rather one who recognizes that there is but one really valid claim, that of the universe itself. But he not only submits to this claim on account of its superiority; he makes it his own. The discipline of Stoicism is the regulation of the individual will to the end that it may coincide with the universal will. There is a part of man by virtue of which he is satisfied with what things are, whatever they be. That part, designated by the Stoics as "the ruling part," is the reason. In so far as man seeks to

understand the laws and natures which actually prevail, he cannot be discontented with anything whatsoever that may be known to him.

"For, in so far as we are intelligent beings, we cannot desire anything save that which is necessary, nor yield absolute acquiescence to anything, save to that which is true: wherefore, in so far as we have a right understanding of these things, the endeavor of the better part of ourselves is in harmony with the order of nature as a whole."<sup>12</sup>

In agreement with this teaching of Spinoza's is the famous Stoic formula to the effect that "nothing can happen contrary to the will of the wise man," who is free through his very acquiescence. If reason be the proper "ruling part," the first step in the moral life is the subordination of the appetitive nature and the enthronement of reason. One who is himself rational will then recognize the fellowship of all rational beings, and the unitary and beneficent rationality of the entire universe. The highest morality is thus already upon the plane of religion.

§ 169. With Spinoza and the Stoics, the perfection of the individual is reduced to what the <sup>The Platonic Ethics of Perfection.</sup> universe requires of him. The good man is willing to be whatever he must

<sup>12</sup> Spinoza: *Op. cit.*, Part IV. Translation by Elwes, p. 243.

be, for the sake of the whole with which through reason he is enabled to identify himself. With Plato and Aristotle the perfection of the individual himself is commended, that the universe may abound in perfection. The good man is the ideal man—the expression of the type. And how different the quality of a morality in keeping with this principle! The virtues which Plato enumerates—temperance, courage, wisdom, and justice—compose a consummate human nature. He is thinking not of the necessities but of the possibilities of life. Knowledge of the truth will indeed be the best of human living, but knowledge is not prized because it can reconcile man to his limitations; it is the very overflowing of his cup of life. The youth are to

“dwell in the land of health, amid fair sights and sounds; and beauty, the effluence of fair works, will visit the eye and ear, like a healthful breeze from a purer region, and insensibly draw the soul even in childhood into harmony with the beauty of reason.”<sup>14</sup>

Aristotle's account of human perfection is more circumstantial and more prosaic. “The function of man is an activity of soul in accordance with reason,” and his happiness or well-being will con-

<sup>14</sup> Plato: *Op. cit.*, 401.

sist in the fulness of rational living. But such fulness requires a sphere of life that will call forth and exercise the highest human capacities. Aristotle frankly pronounces "external goods" to be indispensable, and happiness to be therefore "a gift of the gods." The rational man will acquire a certain exquisiteness or finesse of action, a "mean" of conduct; and this virtue will be diversified through the various relations into which he must enter, and the different situations which he must meet. He will be not merely brave, temperate, and just, as Plato would have him, but liberal, magnificent, gentle, truthful, witty, friendly, and in all self-respecting or high-minded. In addition to these strictly moral virtues, he will possess the intellectual virtues of prudence and wisdom, the resources of art and science; and will finally possess the gift of insight, or intuitive reason. Speculation will be his highest activity, and the mark of his kinship with the gods who dwell in the perpetual contemplation of the truth.

The Religion of Fulfilment, § 170. Aristotle's ethics expresses the buoyancy of the ancient world, when the Religion of Renunciation. the individual does not feel himself oppressed by the eternal reality, but rejoices in it. He is not too conscious of his sufferings to be

disinterested in his admiration and wonder. It is this which distinguishes the religion of Plato and Aristotle from that of the Stoics and Spinoza. With both alike, religion consists not in making the world, but in contemplating it; not in coöperating with God, but in worshipping him. Plato and Aristotle, however, do not find any antagonism between the ways of God and the natural interests of men. God does not differ from men save in his exalted perfection. The contemplation and worship of him comes as the final and highest stage of a life which is organic and continuous throughout. The love of God is the natural love when it has found its true object.

"For he who has been instructed thus far in the things of love, and who has learned to see the beautiful in due order and succession, when he comes toward the end will suddenly perceive a nature of wondrous beauty—and this, Socrates, is that final cause of all our former toils, which in the first place is everlasting—not growing and decaying, or waxing and waning; in the next place not fair in one point of view and foul in another, . . . or in the likeness of a face or hands or any other part of the bodily frame, or in any form of speech or knowledge, nor existing in any other being; . . . but beauty only, absolute, separate, simple, and everlasting, which without diminution and without increase, or any change, is imparted to the ever-growing and perishing beauties of all other things."<sup>15</sup>

<sup>15</sup> Plato: *Symposium*, 210-211. Translation by Jowett.

The religion of Spinoza is the religion of one who has renounced the favor of the universe. He was deprived early in life of every benefit of fortune, and set out to find the good which required no special dispensation but only the common lot and the common human endowment. He found that good to consist in the conviction of the necessity, made acceptable through the supremacy of the understanding. The like faith of the Stoics makes of no account the difference of fortune between Marcus the emperor and Epictetus the slave.

"For two reasons, then, it is right to be content with that which happens to thee; the one because it was done for thee and prescribed for thee, and in a manner had reference to thee, originally from the most ancient causes spun with thy destiny; and the other because even that which comes severally to every man is to the power which administers the universe a cause of felicity and perfection, nay even of its very continuance. For the integrity of the whole is mutilated, if thou cuttest off anything whatever from the conjunction and the continuity either of the parts or of the causes. And thou dost cut off, as far as it is in thy power, when thou art dissatisfied, and in a manner triest to put anything out of the way."<sup>16</sup>

<sup>16</sup> Marcus Aurelius Antoninus: *Thoughts*. Translation by Long, p. 141.

## CHAPTER XI

### ABSOLUTE IDEALISM<sup>1</sup>

§ 171. ABSOLUTE idealism is the most elaborately constructive of all the historical types of General philosophy. Though it may have over-Constructive looked elementary truths, and have Character of Absolute sought to combine irreconcilable prin- Idealism. ciples, it cannot be charged with lack of sophistica-tion or subtlety. Its great virtue is its recognition of problems—its exceeding circumspection; while its great promise is due to its comprehensiveness—its generous provision for all interests and points of view. But its very breadth and complexity ren-der this philosophy peculiarly liable to the equivo-cal use of conceptions. This may be readily understood from the nature of the central doctrine of absolute idealism. According to this doctrine it is proposed to define the universe as an *abso-*

<sup>1</sup> By *Absolute Idealism* is meant that system of philosophy which defines the universe as the *absolute spirit*, which is the human *moral*, *cognitive*, or *appreciative consciousness* universalized; or as the *absolute, transcendental mind*, whose state of *complete knowledge* is implied in all finite thinking.

*true spirit*, or a being infinite, ultimate, eternal, and self-sufficient, like the being of Plato and Spinoza, but possessing at the same time the distinguishing properties of spirit. Such conceptions as self-consciousness, will, knowledge, and moral goodness are carried over from the realm of human endeavor and social relations to the unitary and all-inclusive reality. Now it has been objected that this procedure is either meaningless, in that it so applies the term spirit as to contradict its meaning; or prejudicial to spiritual interests, in that it neutralizes the properties of spirit through so extending their use. Thus one may contend that to affirm that the universe as a whole is spirit is meaningless, since moral goodness requires special conditions and relations that cannot be attributed to the universe as a whole; or one may contend that such doctrine is prejudicial to moral interests because by attributing spiritual perfection to the totality of being it discredits all moral loyalties and antagonisms. The difficulties that lie in the way of absolute idealism are due, then, to the complexity of its synthesis, to its complementary recognition of differences and resolution of them into unity. But this synthesis is due to the urgency of certain great problems which the first

or realistic expression of the absolutist motive left undiscovered and unsolved.

§ 172. It is natural to approach so deliberate and calculating a philosophy from the stand-point of the problems which it proposes to solve. One of these is the epistemological problem of the relation between the state of knowledge and its object. Naturalism and absolute realism side with common-sense in its assumption that although the real object is essential to the valid state of knowledge, its being known is not essential to the real object. Subjectivism, on the other hand, maintains that being is essentially the content of a knowing state, or an activity of the knower himself. Absolute idealism proposes to accept the general epistemological principle of subjectivism; but to satisfy the realistic demand for a standard, compelling object, by setting up an *absolute knower*, with whom all valid knowledge must be in agreement. This epistemological statement of absolute idealism is its most mature phase; and the culminating phase, in which it shows unmistakable signs of passing over into another doctrine. We must look for its pristine inspiration in its solution of another fundamental problem: that of the relation between the

The Great  
Outstanding  
Problems of  
Absolutism.

absolute and the empirical. Like absolute realism, this philosophy regards the universe as a unitary and internally necessary being, and undertakes to hold that being accountable for every item of experience. But we have found that absolute realism is beset with the difficulty of thus accounting for the fragmentariness and isolation of the individual. The contention that the universe must really be a rational or perfect unity is disputed by the evident multiplicity, irrelevance, and imperfection in the foreground of experience. The inference to perfection and the confession of imperfection seem equally unavoidable. Rational necessities and empirical facts are out of joint.

§ 173. Even Plato had been conscious of a certain responsibility for matters of fact. Inasmuch

The Greek Philosophers and the Problem of Evil. The Task of the New Absolutism. as he attached the predicate of reality to the absolute perfection, he made that being the only source to which they could be referred. Perhaps, then, he suggests, they are due to the very bounteousness of God.

"He was good, and no goodness can ever have any jealousy of anything. And being free from jealousy, he desired that all things should be as like himself as possible."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>2</sup> Plato: *Timaeus*, 29. Translation by Jowett.

Plotinus, in whom Platonism is leavened by the spirit of an age which is convinced of sin, and which is therefore more keenly aware of the positive existence of the imperfect, follows out this suggestion. Creation is "emanation"—the overflow of God's excess of goodness. But one does not readily understand how goodness, desiring all things to be like itself, should thereupon create evil—even to make it good. The Aristotelian philosophy, with its conception of the gradation of substances, would seem to be better equipped to meet the difficulty. A development requires stages; and every finite thing may thus be perfect in its way and perfect in its place, while in the absolute truth or God there is realized the meaning of the whole order. But if so, there is evidently something that escapes God, to wit, the meaningless and unfitness, the error and evil, of the stages in their successive isolation. Nor is it of any avail to insist (as did Plato, Aristotle, and Spinoza alike) that these are only privation, and therefore not to be counted in the sum of reality. For privation is itself an experience, with a great variety of implications, moral and psychological; and these cannot be attributed to God or deduced from him, in consideration of his absolute perfection,

The task of the new absolutism is now in clear view. The perfect must be amended to admit the imperfect. The absolute significance must be so construed as to provide for the evident facts for the unmeaning things and changes of the natural order; for ignorance, sin, despair, and every human deficiency. The new philosophy is to solve this problem by defining a *spiritual absolute*, and by so construing the life or dynamics of spirit, as to demonstrate the necessity of the very imperfection and opposition which is so baffling to the realist.

§ 174. Absolute idealism, which is essentially a modern doctrine, does not begin with rhapsodies, but with a very sober analysis of familiar truths, conducted by the most sober of all philosophers, Immanuel Kant. This philosopher lived in Königsberg, Germany, at the close of the eighteenth century. He is related to absolute idealism much as Socrates is related to Platonism: he was not himself speculative, but employed a critical method which was transformed by his followers into a metaphysical construction. It is essential to the understanding both of Kant and of his more speculative successors, to observe that he begins with the recognition of certain non-philosophical truths—  
The Beginning  
of Absolute  
Idealism  
in Kant's  
Analysis of  
Experience.

those of *natural science* and the *moral consciousness*. He accepts the order of nature formulated in the Newtonian dynamics, and the moral order acknowledged in the common human conviction of duty. And he is interested in discovering the ground upon which these common affirmations rest, the structure which virtually supports them as types of knowledge. But a general importance attaches to the analysis because these two types of knowledge (together with the æsthetic judgment, which is similarly analyzed) are regarded by Kant as coextensive with experience itself. The *very least experience* that can be reported upon at all is an experience of nature or duty, and as such will be informed with their characteristic principles. Let us consider the former type. The simplest instance of nature is the experience of the single perceived object. In the first place, such an object will be perceived as in space and time. These Kant calls the *forms of intuition*. An object cannot even be presented or given without them. But, furthermore, it will be regarded as substance, that is, as having a substratum that persists through changes of position or quality. It will also be regarded as causally

ity, substance, and like principles to the number of twelve, Kant calls the *categories of the understanding*. Both intuition and understanding are indispensable to the experience of any object whatsoever. They may be said to condition the object in general. Their principles condition the process of making something out of the manifold of sensation. But similarly, every moral experience recognizes what Kant calls the *categorical imperative*. The categorical imperative is the law of reasonableness or impartiality in conduct, requiring the individual to act on a maxim which he can "will to be law universal." No state of desire or situation calling for action means anything morally except in the light of this obligation. Thus certain principles of thought and action are said to be implicit in all experience. They are universal and necessary in the sense that they are discovered as the conditions not of any particular experience, but of experience in general. This implicit or virtual presence in experience in general, Kant calls their transcendental character, and the process of explicating them is his famous *Transcendental Deduction*.

§ 175. The restriction which Kant puts upon his method is quite essential to its meaning. I

deduce the categories, for example, just in so far as I find them to be necessary to perception.

*Kant's Principles Restricted to the Experiences which they Set in Order.* Without them my perception is blind, I make nothing of it; with them my experience becomes systematic and rational. But categories which I so deduce must be forever limited to the rôle for which they are defined. Categories without perceptions are "empty"; they have validity solely with reference to the experience which they set in order. Indeed, I cannot even complete that order. The orderly arrangement of parts of experience suggests, and suggests irresistibly, a perfect system. I can even define the ideas and ideals through which such a perfect system might be realized. But I cannot in the Kantian sense attach reality to it because it is not indispensable to experience. It must remain an ideal which regulates my thinking of such parts of it as fall within the range of my perception; or it may through my moral nature become the realm of my living and an object of faith. In short, Kant's is essentially a "critical philosophy," a logical and analytical study of the special terms and relations of human knowledge. He denies the validity of these terms and relations beyond this realm. His critiques are an invention

tory of the conditions, principles, and prospects of that cognition which, although not alone ideally conceivable, is alone possible.

§ 176. With the successors of Kant, as with the successors of Socrates, a criticism becomes a

The Post-Kantian Metaphysics is a Generalization of the Cognitive and Moral Consciousness as Analyzed by Kant. The Absolute Spirit. system of metaphysics. This transformation is effected in the post-Kantian by a generalization of the human cognitive consciousness. According to Kant's analysis it contains a manifold of sense which must be organized by categories in obedience to the ideal of a rational universe. The whole enterprise, with its problems given in perception, its instruments available in the activities of the understanding, and its ideals revealed in the reason, is an organic spiritual unity, manifesting itself in the self-consciousness of the thinker. Now in absolute idealism this very enterprise of knowledge, made universal and called the *absolute spirit* or *mind*, is taken to be the ultimate reality. And here at length would seem to be afforded the conception of a being to which the problematic and the rational, the data and the principles, the natural and the ideal, are alike indispensable. We are now to seek the real not in the ideal itself.

but in that spiritual unity in which appearance is the incentive to truth, and natural imperfection the spring to goodness. This may be translated into the language which Plato uses in the "Symposium," when Diotima is revealing to Socrates the meaning of love. The new reality will be not the loved one, but love itself.

"What then is Love? Is he mortal?"

"No."

"What then?"

"As in the former instance, he is neither mortal nor immortal, but is a mean between them."

"What is he then, Diotima?"

"He is a great spirit, and like all that is spiritual he is intermediate between the divine and the mortal."<sup>3</sup>

Reality is no longer the God who mingles not with men, but that power which, as Diotima further says, "interprets and conveys to the gods the prayers and sacrifices of men, and to men the commands and rewards of the gods."

In speaking for such an idealism, Emerson says:

"Everything good is on the highway. The middle region of our being is the temperate zone. We may climb into the thin and cold realm of pure geometry and lifeless science, or sink into that of sensation. Between these extremes is the equator of life, of thought, of spirit, of poetry. . . . The mid-world is best."<sup>4</sup>

<sup>3</sup> Plato: *Symposium*, 202. Translation by Jowett.

<sup>4</sup> Emerson: *Essays, Second Series*, pp. 65-66.

The new reality is this highway of the spirit, the very course and raceway of self-consciousness. It is traversed in the movement and self-correction of thought, in the interest in ideals, or in the submission of the will to the control of the moral law.

§ 177. It is the last of these phases of self-consciousness that Fichte, who was Kant's immediate Fichteanism, or the Absolute Spirit as Moral Activity. successor, regards as of paramount importance. As Platonism began with the ideal of the good or the object of life, so the new idealism begins with the conviction of duty, or *the story of life*. Being is the living moral nature compelled to build itself a natural order wherein it may obey the moral law, and to divide itself into a community of moral selves through which the moral virtues may be realized. Nature and society flow from the conception of an absolute moral activity, or ego. Such an ego could not be pure and isolated and yet be moral. The evidence of this is the common moral consciousness. My duty compels me to act upon the not-self or environment, and to respect and coöperate with other selves. Fichte's absolute is this moral consciousness universalized and made eternal. Moral value being its fundamental principle the universe must on that very account em-

brace both nature, or moral indifference, and humanity, or moral limitation.

§178. But the Romanticists, who followed close upon Fichte, were dissatisfied with so hard and exclusive a conception of spiritual being. <sup>Romanticism, or the Absolute Spirit as Sentiment.</sup> Life, they said, is not all duty. Indeed, the true spiritual life is quite other, not harsh and constrained, but free and spontaneous—a wealth of feeling playing about a constantly shifting centre. Spirit is not consecutive and law-abiding, but capricious and wanton, seeking the beautiful in no orderly progression, but in a refined and versatile sensibility. If this be the nature of spirit, and if spirit be the nature of reality, then he is most wise who is most rich in sentiment. The Romanticists were the exponents of an absolute sentimentalism. And they did not prove it, but like good sentimentalists they felt it.

§ 179. Hegel, the master of the new idealism, set himself the task of construing spirit in terms <sup>Hegelianism, or the Absolute Spirit as Dialectic.</sup> as consecutive as those of Fichte, and as comprehensive as those of the Romanticists. Like Plato, he found in dialectic the supreme manifestation of the spiritual life. There is a certain flow of ideas which

determines the meaning of experience, and is the truth of truths. But the mark of the new prophet is this: the flow of ideas itself is *a process of self-correction due to a sense of error*. Thus bare sensation is abstract and bare thought is abstract. The real, however, is not merely the concrete in which they are united, but the very process in the course of which through knowledge of abstraction thought arrives at the concrete. The principle of negation is the very life of thought, and it is *the life of thought*, rather than the outcome of thought, which is reality. The most general form of the dialectical process contains three moments: the moment of *thesis*, in which affirmation is made; the moment of *antithesis*, in which the opposite asserts itself; and the moment of *synthesis*, in which a reconciliation is effected in a new thesis. Thus thought is the progressive overcoming of contradiction; not the state of freedom from contradiction, but the act of escaping it. Such processes are more familiar in the moral life. Morality consists, so even common-sense asserts, in the overcoming of evil. Character is the resistance of temptation; goodness, a growth in grace through discipline. Of such, for Hegel, is the very kingdom of heaven. It is the task of the philosopher,

a task to which Hegel applies himself most assiduously, to analyze the battle and the victory upon which spiritual being nourishes itself. And since the deeper processes are those of thought, the Hegelian philosophy centres in an ordering of notions, a demonstration of that necessary progression of thought which, in its whole dynamical logical history, constitutes the *absolute idea*.

§ 180. The Hegelian philosophy, with its emphasis upon difference, antagonism, and development, is peculiarly qualified to be a philosophy of nature and history. Those principles of spiritual development which logic defines are conceived as incarnate in the evolution of the world. Nature, as the very antithesis to spirit, is now understood to be the foil of spirit. In nature spirit alienates itself in order to return enriched. The stages of nature are the preparation for the reviving of a spirituality that has been deliberately forfeited. The Romanticists, whether philosophers like Schelling or poets like Goethe and Wordsworth, were led by their feeling for the beauty of nature to attribute to it a much deeper and more direct spiritual significance. But Hegel and the Romanticists alike are truly expressed in Emerson's belief that the

The Hegelian Philosophy of Nature and History.

spiritual interpretation of nature is the "true science."

"The poet alone knows astronomy, chemistry, vegetation, and animation, for he does not stop at these facts, but employs them as signs. He knows why the plain or meadow of space was strown with these flowers we call suns and moons and stars; why the great deep is adorned with animals, with men, and gods; for in every word he speaks he rides on them as the horses of thought."<sup>5</sup>

The new awakening of spirit which is for Hegel the consummation of the natural evolution, begins with the individual or *subjective* spirit, and develops into the social or *objective* spirit, which is morality and history. History is a veritable dialectic of nations, in the course of which the consciousness of individual liberty is developed, and coördinated with the unity of the state. The highest stage of spirit incarnate is that of *absolute* spirit, embracing art, religion, and philosophy. In art the absolute idea obtains expression in sensuous existence, more perfectly in classical than in

<sup>5</sup> Emerson: *Op. cit.*, p. 25.

The possibility of conflict between this method of nature study and the empirical method of science is significantly attested by the circumstance that in the year 1801 Hegel published a paper in which he maintained, on the ground of certain numerical harmonies, that there could be no planet between Mars and Jupiter, while at almost exactly the same time Piazzi discovered Ceres, the first of the asteroids.

the symbolic art of the Orient, but most perfectly in the romantic art of the modern period. In religion the absolute idea is expressed in the imagination through worship. In Oriental pantheism, the individual is overwhelmed by his sense of the universal; in Greek religion, God is but a higher man; while in Christianity God and man are perfectly united in Christ. Finally, in philosophy the absolute idea reaches its highest possible expression in articulate thought.

§ 181. Such is absolute idealism approached from the stand-point of antecedent metaphysics.

*Résumé.* It is the most elaborate and subtle provision for antagonistic differences within unity that the speculative mind of man has as yet been able to make.

*Fai ure of Ab-*  
*solute Ideahsm*  
*to Solve the*  
*Problem of*  
*Evil.* It is the last and most thorough attempt to resolve individual and universal, temporal and eternal, natural and ideal, good and evil, into an absolute unity in which the universal, eternal, ideal, and good shall dominate, and in which all terms shall be related with such necessity as obtains in the definitions and theorems of geometry. There is to be some absolute meaning which is rational to the uttermost and the necessary ground of all the incidents of existence. Thought could undertake no

more ambitious and exacting task. Nor is it evident after all that absolute idealism enjoys any better success in this task than absolute realism. The difference between them becomes much less marked when we reflect that the former, like the latter, must reserve the predicate of being for the unity of the whole. Even though evil and contradiction belong to the essence of things, move in the secret heart of a spiritual universe, the reality is not these in their severality, but that life within which they fall, the story within which they "earn a place." And if absolute idealism has defined a new perfection, it has at the same time defined a new imperfection. The perfection is rich in contrast, and thus inclusive of both the lights and shades of experience; but the perfection belongs only to the composition of these elements within a single view. It is not necessary to such perfection that the evil should ever be viewed in isolation. The idealist employs the analogy of the drama or the picture whose very significance requires the balance of opposing forces; or the analogy of the symphony in which a higher musical quality is realized through the resolution of discord into harmony. But none of these unities requires any element whatsoever that does not partake of its

beauty. It is quite irrelevant to the drama that the hero should himself have his own view of events with no understanding of their dramatic value, as it is irrelevant to the picture that an unbalanced fragment of it should dwell apart, or to the symphony that the discord should be heard without the harmony. One may multiply without end the internal differences and antagonisms that contribute to the internal meaning, and be as far as ever from understanding the external detachment of experiences that are not rational or good in themselves. And it is precisely this kind of fact that precipitates the whole problem. We do not judge of sin and error from experiences in which they conduct to goodness and truth, but from experiences in which they are stark and unresolved.

In view of such considerations many idealists have been willing to confess their inability to solve this problem. To quote a recent expositor of Hegel,

"We need not, after all, be surprised at the apparently insoluble problem which confronts us. For the question has developed into the old difficulty of the origin of evil, which has always baffled both theologians and philosophers. An idealism which declares that the universe is in reality perfect, can find, as most forms of popular

idealism do, an escape from the difficulties of the existence of evil, by declaring that the universe is as yet only growing towards its ideal perfection. But this refuge disappears with the reality of time, and we are left with an awkward difference between what philosophy tells us must be, and what our life tells us actually is.”<sup>6</sup>

If the philosophy of eternal perfection persists in its fundamental doctrine in spite of this irreconcilable conflict with life, it is because it is believed that that doctrine *must* be true. Let us turn, then, to its more constructive and compelling argument.

§ 182. The proof of absolute idealism is supposed by the majority of its exponents to follow from the problem of epistemology, and more particularly from the manifest dependence of truth upon the knowing mind. In its initial phase absolute idealism is indistinguishable from subjectivism. Like that philosophy it finds that the object of knowledge is inseparable from the state of knowledge throughout the whole range of experience. Since the knower can never escape himself, it may be set down as an elementary fact that reality (at any rate whatever reality can be known or even talked about) owes its being to mind.

The Constructive Argument for Absolute Idealism is Based upon the Subjectivistic Theory of Knowledge.

<sup>6</sup> McTaggart: *Studies in Hegelian Dialectic*, p. 181.

Thus Green, the English neo-Hegelian, maintains that "an object which no consciousness presented to itself would not be an object at all," and wonders that this principle is not generally taken for granted and made the starting-point for philosophy.<sup>7</sup> However, unless the very term "object" is intended to imply presence to a subject, this principle is by no means self-evident, and must be traced to its sources.

We have already followed the fortunes of that empirical subjectivism which issues from the relativity of perception. At the very dawn of philosophy it was observed that what is seen, heard, or otherwise experienced through the senses, depends not only upon the use of sense-organs, but upon the special point of view occupied by each individual sentient being. It was therefore concluded that the perceptual world belonged to the human knower with his limitations and perspective, rather than to being itself. It was this epistemological principle upon which Berkeley founded his empirical idealism. Believing knowledge to consist essentially in perception, and believing perception to be subjective, he had to choose between the relegation of being to a region inac-

<sup>7</sup> Green. *Prolegomena to Ethics*, p 15.

cessible to knowledge, and the definition of being in terms of subjectivity. To avoid scepticism he accepted the latter alternative. But among the Greeks with whom this theory of perception originated, it drew its meaning in large part from the distinction between perception and reason. Thus we read in Plato's "Sophist":

"And you would allow that we participate in generation with the body, and by perception; but we participate with the soul by thought in true essence, and essence you would affirm to be always the same and immutable, whereas generation varies."<sup>8</sup>

It is conceived that although in perception man is condemned to a knowledge conditioned by the affections and station of his body, he may nevertheless escape himself and lay hold on the "true essence" of things, by virtue of thought. In other words, knowledge, in contradistinction to "opinion," is not made by the subject, but is the soul's participation in the eternal natures of things. In the moment of insight the varying course of the individual thinker coincides with the unvarying truth; but in that moment the individual thinker is ennobled through being assimilated to the truth, while the truth is no more, no less, the truth than before.

<sup>8</sup> Plato; *The Sophist*, 248, Translation by Jowett.

§ 183. In absolute idealism, the principle of subjectivism is extended to reason itself. This extension seems to have been originally due to moral and religious interests. From the moral stand-point the contemplation of the truth is a *state*, and the highest state of the individual life. The religious interest unifies the individual life and directs attention to its spiritual development. Among the Greeks of the middle period life was as yet viewed objectively as the fulfilment of capacities, and knowledge was regarded as perfection of function, the exercise of the highest of human prerogatives. But as moral and religious interests became more absorbing, the individual lived more and more in his own self-consciousness. Even before the Christian era the Greek philosophers themselves were preoccupied with the task of winning a state of inner serenity. Thus the Stoics and Epicureans came to look upon knowledge as a means to the attainment of an inner freedom from distress and bondage to the world. In other words, the very reason was regarded as an activity of the self, and its fruits were valued for their enhancement of the welfare of the self. And if this be true of the Stoics and the Epicureans, it is still more clearly true of the neo-Platonists of

The Principle of Subjectivism Extended to Reason.

*self.* St. Augustine's genius was primarily religious, and the "Confessions," in which he records the story of his hard winning of peace and right relations with God, is his most intimate book. How faithfully does he represent himself, and the blend of paganism and Christianity which was distinctive of his age, when in his systematic writings he draws upon religion for his knowledge of truth! In all my living, he argues, whether I sin or turn to God, whether I doubt or believe, whether I know or am ignorant, in all *I know that I am I.* Each and every state of my consciousness is a state of my self, and as such, sure evidence of my self's existence. If one were to follow St. Augustine's reflections further, one would find him reasoning from his own finite and evil self to an infinite and perfect Self, which centres like his in the conviction that I am I, but is endowed with all power and all worth. One would find him reflecting upon the possible union with God through the exaltation of the human self-consciousness. But this conception of God as the perfect self is so much a prophecy of things to come, that more than a dozen centuries elapsed before it was explicitly formulated by the post-Kantians. We must follow its more gradual de-

velopment in the philosophies of Descartes and Kant.

§ 185. When at the close of the sixteenth century the Frenchman, René Descartes, sought to construct philosophy anew and upon secure foundations, he too selected as the initial certainty of thought the thinker's knowledge of himself. This principle now received its classic formulation in the proposition, *Cogito ergo sum*—"I think, hence I am." The argument does not differ essentially from that of St. Augustine, but it now finds a place in a systematic and critical metaphysics. In that my thinking is certain of itself, says Descartes, in that I know myself before I know aught else, my self can never be dependent for its being upon anything else that I may come to know. A thinking self, with its knowledge and its volition, is quite capable of subsisting of itself. Such is, indeed, not the case with a finite self, for all finitude is significant of limitation, and in recognizing my limitations I postulate the infinite being or God. But the relation of my self to a physical world is quite without necessity. Human nature, with soul and body conjoined, is a combination of two substances, neither of which is a necessary consequence of the

other. As a result of this combination the soul is to some extent affected by the body, and the body is to some extent directed by the soul; but the body could conceivably be an automaton, as the soul could conceivably be, and will in another life become, a free spirit. The consequences of this dualism for epistemology are very grave. If knowledge be the activity of a self-subsistent thinking spirit, how can it reveal the nature of an external world? The natural order is now literally "external." It is true that the whole body of exact science, that mechanical system to which Descartes attached so much importance, falls within the range of the soul's own thinking. But what assurance is there that it refers to a province of its own—a physical world in space? Descartes can only suppose that "clear and distinct" ideas must be trusted as faithful representations. It is true the external world makes its presence known directly, when it breaks in upon the soul in sense-perception. But Descartes's rationalism and love of mathematics forbade his attaching importance to this criterion. Real nature, that exactly definable and predictable order of moving bodies defined in physics, is not known through sense-perception, but through thought. Its necessities

are the necessities of reason. Descartes finds himself, then, in the perplexing position of seeking an internal criterion for an external world. The problem of knowledge so stated sets going the whole epistemological movement of the eighteenth century, from Locke through Berkeley and Hume to Kant. And the issue of this development is the absolute idealism of Kant's successors.

§ 186. Of the English philosophers who prepare the way for the epistemology of Kant, Hume

*Empirical Reaction of the English Philosophers.* is the most radical and momentous. It was he who roused Kant from his "dogmatic slumbers" to the task of the "Critical Philosophy." Hume is one of the two possible consequences of Descartes. One who attaches greater importance to the rational necessities of science than to its external reference, is not unwilling that nature should be swallowed up in mind. With Malebranche, Descartes's immediate successor in France, nature is thus provided for within the archetypal mind of God. With the English philosophers, on the other hand, externality is made the very mark of nature, and as a consequence sense-perception becomes the criterion of scientific truth. This empirical theory of knowledge, inaugurated and developed by Locke

and Berkeley, culminates in Hume's designation of the *impression* as the distinguishing element of nature, at once making up its content and certifying to its externality. The processes of nature are successions of impressions; and the laws of nature are their uniformities, or the expectations of uniformity which their repetitions engender. Hume does not hesitate to draw the logical conclusion. If the final mark of truth is the presence to sense of the individual element, then science can consist only of items of information and probable generalizations concerning their sequences. The effect is observed to follow upon the cause in fact, but there is no understanding of its necessity; therefore no absolute certainty attaches to the future effects of any cause.

§ 187. But what has become of the dream of the mathematical physicist? Is the whole system  
To Save Exact of Newton, that brilliant triumph of the Science Kant Makes it mechanical method, unfounded and dog-Dependent on Mind. matic? It is the logical instability of this body of knowledge, made manifest in the well-founded scepticism of Hume, that rouses Kant to a reëxamination of the whole foundation of natural science. The general outline of his analysis has been developed above. It is of importance here

to understand its relations to the problem of Descartes. Contrary to the view of the English philosophers, natural science is, says Kant, the work of the mind. The certainty of the causal relation is due to the human inability to think otherwise. Hume is mistaken in supposing that mere sensation gives us any knowledge of nature. The very least experience of objects involves the employment of principles which are furnished by the mind. Without the employment of such principles, or in bare sensation, there is no intelligible meaning whatsoever. But once admit the employment of such principles and formulate them systematically, and the whole Newtonian order of nature is seen to follow from them. Furthermore, since these principles or categories are the conditions of human experience, are the very instruments of knowledge, they are valid wherever there is any experience or knowledge. There is but one way to make anything at all out of nature, and that is to conceive it as an order of necessary events in space and time. Newtonian science is part of such a general conception, and is therefore necessary if knowledge is to be possible at all, even the least. Thus Kant turns upon Hume, and shuts him up to the choice between the utter abnegation

of all knowledge, including the knowledge of his own scepticism, and the acceptance of the whole body of exact science.

But with nature thus conditioned by the necessities of thought, what has become of its externality? That, Kant admits, has indeed vanished. Kant does not attempt, as did Descartes, to hold that the nature which mind constructs and controls, exists also outside of mind. The nature that is known is on that very account phenomenal, anthropocentric—created by its cognitive conditions. Descartes was right in maintaining that sense-perception certifies to the existence of a world outside the mind, but mistaken in calling it nature and identifying it with the realm of science. In short, Kant acknowledges the external world, and names it the *thing-in-itself*; but insists that because it is outside of mind it is outside of knowledge. Thus is the certainty of science saved at the cost of its metaphysical validity. It is necessarily true, but only of a conditioned or dependent world. And in saving science Kant has at the same time prejudiced metaphysics in general. For the human or naturalistic way of knowing is left in sole possession of the field, with the higher interest of reasons in the ultimate

nature of being, degraded to the rank of practical faith.

§ 188. The transformation of this critical and agnostic doctrine into absolute idealism is inevitable. The metaphysical interest was bound to avail itself of the speculative in-general into suggestiveness with which the Kantian philosophy abounds. The transformation turns upon Kant's assumption that whatever is constructed by the mind is on that account phenomenon or appearance. Kant has carried along the presumption that whatever is act or content of mind is on that account not *real* object or *thing-in-itself*. We have seen that this is generally accepted as true of the relativities of sense-perception. But is it true of thought? The post-Kantian idealist maintains that *that depends upon the thought*. The content of private individual thinking is in so far not real object; but it does not follow that this is true of such thinking as is universally valid. Now Kant has deduced his categories for thought in general. There are no empirical cases of thinking except the human thinkers; but the categories are not the property of any one human individual or any group of such individuals. They are the conditions of *experience*.

*ence in general*, and of every possibility of experience. The transition to absolute idealism is now readily made. *Thought in general* becomes the *absolute mind*, and experience in general its content. The *thing-in-itself* drops out as having no meaning. The objectivity to which it testified is provided for in the completeness and self-sufficiency which is attributed to the absolute experience. Indeed, an altogether new definition of subjective and objective replaces the old. The subjective is that which is only insufficiently thought, as in the case of relativity and error; the objective is that which is completely thought. Thus the natural order is indeed phenomenal; but only because the principles of science are not the highest principles of thought, and not because nature is the fruit of thought. Thus Hegel expresses his relation to Kant as follows:

"According to Kant, the things that we know about are *to us* appearances only, and we can never know their essential nature, which belongs to another world, which we cannot approach. . . . The true statement of the case is as follows. The things of which we have direct consciousness are mere phenomena, not for us only, but in their own nature; and the true and proper case of these things, finite as they are, is to have their existence founded not in themselves, but in the universal divine idea. This view of things, it is true, is as idealist

as Kant's, but in contradistinction to the subjective idealism of the Critical Philosophy should be termed Absolute Idealism."<sup>9</sup>

§ 189. Absolute idealism is thus reached after a long and devious course of development. But

The Direct Argument. The Inference from the Finite Mind to the Infinite Mind. the argument may be stated much more briefly. Plato, it will be remembered, found that experience tends ever to transcend itself. The thinker finds himself compelled to pursue the ideal of immutable and universal truth, and must identify the ultimate being with that ideal. Similarly Hegel says:

"That upward spring of the mind signifies that the being which the world has is only a semblance, no real being, no absolute truth; it signifies that beyond and above that appearance, truth abides in God, so that true being is another name for God."<sup>10</sup>

The further argument of absolute idealism differs from that of Plato in that the dependence of truth upon the mind is accepted as a first principle. The ideal with which experience is informed is now *the state of perfect knowledge*, rather than the

<sup>9</sup> Hegel: *Encyclopädie*, § 45, lecture note. Quoted by McTaggart: *Op. cit.*, p. 69.

<sup>10</sup> Hegel: *Encyclopädie*, § 50. Quoted by McTaggart: *Op. cit.*, p. 70.

system of absolute truth. The content of the state of perfect knowledge will indeed be the system of absolute truth, but none the less *content*, precisely as finite knowledge is the content of a finite mind. In pursuing the truth, I who pursue, aim to realize in myself a certain highest state of knowledge. Were I to know all truth I should indeed have ceased to be the finite individual who began the quest, but the evolution would be continuous and the character of self-consciousness would never have been lost. I may say, in short, that God or being, is my perfect cognitive self.

The argument for absolute idealism is a constructive interpretation of the subjectivistic contention that knowledge can never escape the circle of its own activity and states. To meet the demand for a final and standard truth, a demand which realism meets with its doctrine of a being independent of any mind, this philosophy defines a *standard mind*. The impossibility of defining objects in terms of relativity to a finite self, conducts dialectically to the conception of the *absolute self*. The sequel to my error or exclusiveness, is truth or inclusiveness. The outcome of the dialectic is determined by the symmetry of the antithesis. Thus, corrected experience implies a last

correcting experience; partial cognition, complete cognition; empirical subject, transcendental subject; finite mind, an absolute mind. The following statement is taken from a contemporary exponent of the philosophy:

"What you and I lack, when we lament our human ignorance, is simply a certain desirable and logically possible state of mind, or type of experience; to wit, a state of mind in which we should wisely be able to say that we had fulfilled in experience what we now have merely in idea, namely, the knowledge, the immediate and felt presence, of what we now call the Absolute Reality. . . . There is an Absolute Experience for which the conception of an absolute reality, *i. e.*, the conception of a system of ideal truth, is fulfilled by the very contents that get presented to this experience. This Absolute Experience is related to our experience as an organic whole to its own fragments. It is an experience which finds fulfilled all that the completest thought can conceive as genuinely possible. Herein lies its definition as an Absolute. For the Absolute Experience, as for ours, there are data, contents, facts. But these data, these contents, express, for the Absolute Experience, its own meaning, its thought, its ideas. Contents beyond these that it possesses, the Absolute Experience knows to be, in genuine truth, impossible. Hence its contents are indeed particular,—a selection from the world of bare or merely conceptual possibilities,—but they form a self-determined whole, than which nothing completer, more organic, more fulfilled, more transparent, or more complete in meaning, is concretely or genuinely possible. On the other hand, these contents are not foreign to those of our finite

experience, but are inclusive of them in the unity of one life.”<sup>11</sup>

§ 190. As has been already intimated, at the opening of this chapter, the inclusion of the whole of reality within a single self is clearly a questionable proceeding. The need of avoiding the relativism of empirical idealism is evident. But if the very meaning of the self-consciousness be due to a certain selection and exclusion within the general field of experience, it is equally evident that the relativity of self-consciousness can never be overcome through appealing to a higher self. One must appeal from the self to the realm of things as they are. Indeed, although the exponents of this philosophy use the language of spiritualism, and accept the idealistic epistemology, their absolute being tends ever to escape the special characters of the self.<sup>12</sup> And inasmuch as the absolute self is commonly set over against the finite or empirical self, as the standard and test of truth, it is the less distin-

The Realistic  
Tendency  
in Absolute  
Idealism.

<sup>11</sup> Royce: *Conception of God*, pp. 19, 43–44.

This argument is well summarized in Green's statement that “the existence of one connected world, which is the presupposition of knowledge, implies the action of one self-conditioning and self-determining mind.” *Prolegomena to Ethics*, p. 181.

guishable from the realist's order of independent beings.

§ 191. But however much absolute idealism may tend to abandon its idealism for the sake of

The Conception of Self-consciousness Central in the Ethics of Absolute Idealism. Kant. its absolutism within the field of metaphysics, such is not the case within the field of ethics and religion. The conception of the self here receives a new emphasis. The same self-consciousness

which admits to the highest truth is the evidence of man's practical dignity. In virtue of his immediate apprehension of the principles of self-hood, and his direct participation in the life of spirit, man may be said to possess the innermost secret of the universe. In order to achieve goodness he must therefore recognize and express *himself*. The Kantian philosophy is here again the starting-point. It was Kant who first gave adequate expression to the Christian idea of the moral self-consciousness.

*"Duty!* Thou sublime and mighty name that dost embrace nothing charming or insinuating, but requirest submission, and yet seekest not to move the will by threatening aught that would arouse natural aversion or terror, but merely holdest forth a law which of itself finds entrance into the mind, . . . a law before which all inclinations are dumb, even though they

secretly counterwork it; what origin is there worthy of thee, and where is to be found the root of thy noble descent which proudly rejects all kindred with the inclinations . . . ? It can be nothing less than a power which elevates man above himself, . . . a power which connects him with an order of things that only the understanding can conceive, with a world which at the same time commands the whole sensible world, and with it the empirically determinable existence of man in time, as well as the sum total of all ends.”<sup>12</sup>

With Kant there can be no morality except conduct be attended by the consciousness of this duty imposed by the higher nature upon the lower. It is this very recognition of a deeper self, of a personality that belongs to the sources and not to the consequences of nature, that constitutes man as a moral being, and only such action as is inspired with a reverence for it can be morally good. Kant does little more than to establish the uncompromising dignity of the moral will. In moral action man submits to a law that issues from himself in virtue of his rational nature. Here he yields nothing, as he owes nothing, to that appetency which binds him to the natural world. As a rational being he himself affirms the very principles which determine the organization of

<sup>12</sup> Kant: *Critical Examination of Practical Reason*. Translated by Abbott in *Kant's Theory of Ethics*, p. 180.

nature. This is his *freedom*, at once the ground and the implication of his duty. Man is free from nature to serve the higher law of his personality.

§ 192. There are two respects in which Kant's ethics has been regarded as inadequate by those Kantian Ethics who draw from it their fundamental principles. It is said that Kant is too rigoristic, that he makes too stern a business of morality, in speaking so much of law and so little of love and spontaneity. There are good reasons for this. Kant seeks to isolate the moral consciousness, and dwell upon it in its purity, in order that he may demonstrate its incommensurability with the values of inclination and sensibility. Furthermore, Kant may speak of the principle of the absolute, and recognize the deeper eternal order as a law, but he may not, if he is to be consistent with his own critical principles, affirm the metaphysical being of such an order. With his idealistic followers it is possible to define the spiritual setting of the moral life, but with Kant it is only possible to define the antagonism of principles. Hence the greater optimism of the post-Kantians. They know that the higher law is the reality, and that he who obeys it thus unites himself with the absolute self. That

which for Kant is only a resolute obedience to more valid principles, to rationally superior rules for action, is for idealism man's appropriation of his spiritual birthright. Since the law is the deeper nature, man may respect and obey it as valid, and at the same time act upon it gladly in the sure knowledge that it will enhance his eternal welfare. Indeed, the knowledge that the very universe is founded upon this law will make him less suspicious of nature and less exclusive in his adherence to any single law. He will be more confident of the essential goodness of all manifestations of a universe which he knows to be fundamentally spiritual.

But it has been urged, secondly, that the Kantian ethics is too formal, too little pertinent to the issues of life. Kant's moral law imposes only obedience to the law, or conduct conceived as suitable to a universal moral community. But what is the nature of such conduct in particular? It may be answered that to maintain the moral self-consciousness, to act dutifully and dutifully only, to be self-reliant and unswerving in the doing of what one ought to do, is to obtain a very specific character. But does this not leave the individual's conduct to his own interpretation of his duty?

It was just this element of individualism which Hegel sought to eliminate through the application of his larger philosophical conception. If that which expresses itself within the individual consciousness as the moral law be indeed the law of that self in which the universe is grounded, it will appear as *objective spirit* in the evolution of society. For Hegel, then, the most valid standard of goodness is to be found in that customary morality which bespeaks the moral leadings of the general humanity, and in those institutions, such as the family and the state, which are the moral acts of the absolute idea itself. Finally, in the realm of *absolute spirit*, in art, in revealed religion, and in philosophy, the individual may approach to the self-consciousness which is the perfect truth and goodness in and for itself.

§ 193. Where the law of life is the implication in the finite self-consciousness of the eternal and divine self-consciousness, there can be no division between morality and religion, as there can be none between thought and will. Whatever man seeks is in the end God. As the perfect fulfilment of the thinking self, God is the truth; as the perfect fulfilment of the willing self, God is the good. The finite

The Peculiar Pantheism and Mysticism of Absolute Idealism.

self-consciousness finds facts that are not understood, and so seeks to resolve itself into the perfect self wherein all that is given has meaning. On the other hand, the finite self-consciousness finds ideals that are not realized, and so seeks to resolve itself into that perfect self wherein all that is significant is given. All interests thus converge toward

"some state of conscious spirit in which the opposition of cognition and volition is overcome—in which we neither judge our ideas by the world, nor the world by our ideas, but are aware that inner and outer are in such close and necessary harmony that even the thought of possible discord has become impossible. In its unity not only cognition and volition, but feeling also, must be blended and united. In some way or another it must have overcome the rift in discursive knowledge, and the immediate must for it be no longer the alien. It must be as direct as art, as certain and universal as philosophy."<sup>12</sup>

The religious consciousness proper to absolute idealism is both pantheistic and mystical, but with distinction. Platonism is pantheistic in that nature is resolved into God. All that is not perfect is esteemed only for its promise of perfection. And Platonism is mystical in that the purification and universalization of the affections brings one

<sup>12</sup> Quoted from McTaggart: *Op. cit.*, pp. 231-232.

in the end to a perfection that exceeds all modes of thought and speech. With Spinoza, on the other hand, God may be said to be resolved into nature. Nature is made divine, but is none the less nature, for its divinity consists in its absolute necessity. Spinoza's pantheism passes over into mysticism because the absolute necessity exceeds in both unity and richness the laws known to the human understanding. In absolute idealism, finally, both God and nature are resolved into the self. For that which is divine in experience is self-consciousness, and this is at the same time the ground of nature. Thus in the highest knowledge the self is expanded and enriched without being left behind. The mystical experience proper to this philosophy is the consciousness of identity, together with the sense of universal immanence. The individual self may be directly sensible of the absolute self, for these are one spiritual life. Thus Emerson says:

"It is a secret which every intellectual man quickly learns, that beyond the energy of his possessed and conscious intellect he is capable of a new energy (as of an intellect doubled on itself), by abandonment to the nature of things; that beside his privacy of power as an individual man, there is a great public power upon which he can draw, by unlocking, at all risks, his human doors, and suffering the ethereal tides to roll and circulate

through him; then he is caught up into the life of the Universe, his speech is thunder, his thought is law, and his words are universally intelligible as the plants and animals. The poet knows that he speaks adequately then only when he speaks somewhat wildly, or ‘with the flower of the mind’; not with the intellect used as an organ, but with the intellect released from all service and suffered to take its direction from its celestial life.”<sup>14</sup>

§ 194. But the distinguishing flavor and quality of this religion arises from its spiritual hospitality. It is not, like Platonism, a contemplation of the best; nor, like pluralistic idealisms, a moral knight-errantry. It is neither a religion of exclusion, nor a religion of reconstruction, but a profound willingness that things should be as they really are. For this reason its devotees have recognized in Spinoza their true forerunner. But idealism is not Spinozism, though it may contain this as one of its strains. For it is not the worship of necessity, Emerson’s “beautiful necessity, which makes man brave in believing that he cannot shun a danger that is appointed, nor incur one that is not”; but the worship of *that which is* necessary.

Not only must one understand that every effort, however despairing, is an element of sense in the universal significance;

<sup>14</sup> Emerson: *Op. cit.*, pp. 30-31.

"that the whole would not be what it is were not precisely this finite purpose left in its own uniqueness to speak precisely its own word—a word which no other purpose can speak in the language of the divine will",<sup>15</sup>

but one must have a zest for such participation, and a heart for the divine will which it profits. Indeed, so much is this religion a love of life, that it may, as in the case of the Romanticists, be a love of caprice. Battle and death, pain and joy, error and truth—all that belongs to the story of this mortal world, are to be felt as the thrill of health, and relished as the essences of God. Religion is an exuberant spirituality, a fearless sensibility, a knowledge of both good and evil, and a will to serve the good, while exulting that the evil will not yield without a battle.

<sup>15</sup> Royce: *The World and the Individual, First Series*, p. 465.

## CHAPTER XII

### CONCLUSION

§ 195. ONE who consults a book of philosophy in the hope of finding there a definite body of truth, sanctioned by the consensus of experts, cannot fail to be disappointed.

*Liability of Philosophy to Revision, Due to its Systematic Character* And it should now be plain that this is due not to the frailties of philosophers, but to the meaning of philosophy. Philosophy is not additive, but reconstructive. Natural science may advance step by step without ever losing ground; its empirical discoveries are in their severality as true as they can ever be. Thus the stars and the species of animals may be recorded successively, and each generation of astronomers and zoologists may take up the work at the point reached by its forerunners. The formulation of results does, it is true, require constant correction and revision—but there is a central body of data which is little affected, and which accumulates from age to age. Now the finality of scientific truth is proportional to the modesty of its claims.

Items of truth persist, while the interpretation of them is subject to alteration with the general advance of knowledge; and, relatively speaking, science consists in items of truth, and philosophy in their interpretation. The liability to revision in science itself increases as that body of knowledge becomes more highly unified and systematic. Thus the present age, with its attempt to construct a single comprehensive system of mechanical science, is peculiarly an age when fundamental conceptions are subjected to a thorough reëxamination —when, for example, so ancient a conception as that of matter is threatened with displacement by that of energy. But philosophy is *essentially unitary and systematic*—and thus *superlatively liable to revision*.

§ 196. It is noteworthy that it is only in this age of a highly systematic natural science that *The One Science and the Many Philosophies.* different systems are projected, as in the case just noted of the rivalry between the strictly mechanical, or corpuscular, theory and the newer theory of energetics. It has heretofore been taken for granted that although there may be many philosophies, there is but one body of science. And it is still taken for granted that the experimental detail of

the individual science is a common fund, to the progressive increase of which the individual scientist contributes the results of his special research; there being *rival* schools of mechanics, physics, or chemistry, only if so far as *fundamental conceptions* or *principles of orderly arrangement* are in question. But philosophy deals exclusively with the most fundamental conceptions and the most general principles of orderly arrangement. Hence it is significant of the very task of philosophy that there should be many tentative systems of philosophy, even that each philosopher should project and construct his own philosophy. Philosophy as the truth of synthesis and reconciliation, of comprehensiveness and coördination, must be a living unity. It is a thinking of entire experience, and can be sufficient only through being all-sufficient. The heart of every philosophy is a harmonizing insight, an intellectual prospect within which all human interests and studies compose themselves. Such knowledge cannot be delegated to isolated collaborators, but will be altogether missed if not loved and sought in its indivisible unity. There is no modest home-keeping philosophy; no safe and conservative philosophy, that can make sure of a part through renouncing the whole. There is no phi-

losophy without intellectual temerity, as there is no religion without moral temerity. And the one is the supreme interest of thought, as the other is the supreme interest of life.

§ 197. Though the many philosophies be inevitable, it must not be concluded that there is therefore no progress in philosophy. The solution from which every great philosophy is precipitated is the mingled wisdom of some latest age, with all of its inheritance. The "positive" knowledge furnished by the sciences, the refinements and distinctions of the philosophers, the ideals of society —these and the whole sum of civilization are its ingredients. Where there is no single system of philosophy significant enough to express the age, as did the systems of Plato, Thomas Aquinas, Descartes, Locke, Kant, Hegel, and the others who belong to the roll of the great philosophers, there exists a *general sophistication*, which is more elusive but not less significant. The present age—at any rate from its own stand-point—is not an age of great philosophical systems. Such systems may indeed be living in our midst unrecognized; but historical perspective cannot safely be anticipated. It is certain that no living voice is known to speak

for this generation as did Hegel, and even Spencer, for the last. There is, however, a significance in this very passing of Hegel and Spencer,—an enlightenment peculiar to an age which knows them, but has philosophically outlived them. There is a moral in the history of thought which just now no philosophy, whether naturalism or transcendentalism, realism or idealism, can fail to draw. The characterization of this contemporary eclecticism or sophification, difficult and uncertain as it must needs be, affords the best summary and interpretation with which to conclude this brief survey of the fortunes of philosophy.

§ 198. Since the problem of metaphysics is the crucial problem of philosophy, the question of its <sup>Metaphysics</sup> present status is fundamental in any <sup>The Antagonistic</sup> characterization of the age. It will <sup>Naturalism and</sup> <sup>Absolutism</sup> appear from the foregoing account of the course of metaphysical development that two fundamental tendencies have exhibited themselves from the beginning. The one of these is naturalistic and empirical, representing the claims of what common sense calls “matters of fact”; the other is transcendental and rational, representing the claims of the standards and ideals which are immanent in experience, and directly manifested in

the great human interests of thought and action. These tendencies have on the whole been antagonistic; and the clear-cut and momentous systems of philosophy have been fundamentally determined by either the one or the other.

Thus materialism is due to the attempt to reduce all of experience to the elements and principles of connection which are employed by the physical sciences to set in order the actual motions, or changes of place, which the parts of experience undergo. Materialism maintains that the motions of bodies are indifferent to considerations of worth, and denies that they issue from a deeper cause of another order. The very ideas of such non-mechanical elements or principles are here provided with a mechanical origin. Similarly a phenomenism, like that of Hume, takes immediate presence to sense as the norm of being and knowledge. Individual items, directly verified in the moment of their occurrence, are held to be at once the content of all real truth, and the source of those abstract ideas which the misguided rationalists mistake for real truth.

But the absolutist, on the other hand, contends that the thinker must *mean* something by the reality which he seeks. If he had it for the looking,

thought would not be, as it so evidently is, a purposive endeavor. And that which is meant by reality can be nothing short of the fulfilment or final realization of this endeavor of thought. To find out what thought seeks, to anticipate the consummation of thought and posit it as real, is therefore the first and fundamental procedure of philosophy. The mechanism of nature, and all matters of fact, must come to terms with this absolute reality, or be condemned as mere appearance. Thus Plato distinguishes the world of "generation" in which we participate by perception, from the "true essence" in which we participate by thought; and Schelling speaks of the modern experimental method as the "corruption" of philosophy and physics, in that it fails to construe nature in terms of spirit.

§ 199. Now it would never occur to a sophisticated philosopher of the present, to one who has Concessions thought out to the end the whole tra-  
from the Side of Absolutism. dition of philosophy, and felt the grav-  
Recognition of Nature. ity of the great historical issues, to  
The Neo-Fichteans. suffer either of these motives to domi-  
nate him to the exclusion of the other. Absolu-  
lutism has long since ceased to speak slightly  
of physical science, and of the world of perception.

It is conceded that motions must be known in the mechanical way, and matters of fact in the matter-of-fact way. Furthermore, the prestige which science enjoyed in the nineteenth century, and the prestige which the empirical and secular world of action has enjoyed to a degree that has steadily increased since the Renaissance, have convinced the absolutist of the intrinsic significance of these parts of experience. They are no longer reduced, but are permitted to flourish in their own right. From the very councils of absolute idealism there has issued a distinction which is fast becoming current, between the World of Appreciation, or the realm of moral and logical principles, and the World of Description, or the realm of empirical generalizations and mechanical causes.<sup>1</sup> It is indeed maintained that the former of these is metaphysically superior; but the latter is ranked without the disparagement of its own proper categories.

With the Fichteans this distinction corresponds to the distinction in the system of Fichte between the active moral ego, and the nature which it posits to act upon. But the *neo-Fichteans* are

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Josiah Royce: *The Spirit of Modern Philosophy*, Lecture XII; *The World and the Individual, Second Series*.

concerned to show that the nature so posited, or the World of Description, is the *realm of mechanical science*, and that the entire system of mathematical and physical truth is therefore morally necessary.<sup>2</sup>

§ 200. A more pronounced tendency in the same direction marks the work of the *neo-Kantians*.  
The Neo-Kantians. These philosophers repudiate the spiritualistic metaphysics of Schopenhauer, Fichte, and Hegel, believing the real significance of Kant to lie in his critical method, in his examination of the first principles of the different systems of knowledge, and especially in his analysis of the foundations of mathematics and physics.<sup>3</sup> In approaching mathematics and phys-

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Hugo Munsterberg: *Psychology and Life*. The more important writings of this school are: *Die Philosophie im Beginn des zwanzigsten Jahrhunderts*, edited by Wilhelm Windelband, and contributed to by Windelband, H. Rickert, O. Liebmann, E. Troeltsch, B. Bauch, and others. This book contains an excellent bibliography. Also, Rickert: *Der Gegenstand der Erkenntnis*; *Die Grenzen der naturwissenschaftlichen Begriffsbildung*, and other works. Windelband: *Präjudizien*; *Geschichte und Naturwissenschaft*. Munsterberg: *Grundzüge der Psychologie*. Eucken: *Die Grundbegriffe der Gegenwart*.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. F. A. Lange: *History of Materialism*, Book II, Chap. I, on *Kant and Materialism*; also Alois Riehl: *Introduction to the Theory of Science and Metaphysics*. Translation by Fairbanks. The more important writings of this school are: Hermann Cohen: *Kant's Theorie der Erfahrung*; *Die*

ies from a general logical stand-point, these neo-Kantians become scarcely distinguishable in interest and temper from those scientists who approach logic from the mathematical and physical stand-point.

§ 201. The finite, moral individual, with his peculiar spiritual perspective, has long since been

Recognition of the Individual Personal Idealism. recognized as essential to the meaning of the universe rationally conceived.

But in its first movement absolute idealism proposed to absorb him in the indivisible absolute self. It is now pointed out that Fichte, and even Hegel himself, means the absolute to be a plurality or society of persons.<sup>4</sup> It is commonly conceded that the will of the absolute must coincide with the wills of all finite creatures in their severality, that God wills in and through men.<sup>5</sup> Corresponding to this individualistic tendency on the part of absolute idealism, there has been recently

*Logik der reinen Erkenntniss*, and other works. Paul Natorp: *Sozialpädagogik; Einleitung in die Psychologie nach kritischer Methode*, and other works. E. Cassirer: *Leibniz' System in seinen wissenschaftlichen Grundlagen*. Riehl: *Der philosophische Keticismus, und seine Bedeutung für die Positive Wissenschaft*. Cf. also E. Husserl: *Logische Untersuchungen*.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. J. M. E. McTaggart: *Studies in Hegelian Cosmology*, Chap. III.

<sup>5</sup> Cf. Royce: *The Conception of God, Supplementary Essay*, pp. 135-322; *The World and the Individual, First Series*.

projected a *personal idealism*, or *humanism*, which springs freshly and directly from the same motive. This philosophy attributes ultimate importance to the human person with his freedom, his interests, his control over nature, and his hope of the advancement of the spiritual kingdom through co-operation with his fellows.<sup>6</sup>

§ 202. Naturalism exhibits a moderation and liberality that is not less striking than that of Concessions from the Side of Naturalism. Recognition of Fundamental Principles. absolutism. This abatement of its claims began in the last century with agnosticism. It was then conceded that there is an order other than that of natural science; but this order was held to be inaccessible to human knowledge. Such a theory is essentially unstable because it employs principles which define a non-natural order, but refuses to credit them or call them knowledge. The

<sup>6</sup> This movement began as a criticism of Hegelianism in behalf of the human personality. Cf. Andrew Seth: *Hegelianism and Personality; Man and the Cosmos; Two Lectures on Theism*. G. H. Howison: *The Limits of Evolution*. The important writings of the more independent movement are: William James: *The Will to Believe*. H. Sturt, editor: *Personal Idealism, Philosophical Essays by Eight Members of Oxford University*. F. C. S. Schiller: *Humanism*. Henri Bergson: *Essai sur les données immédiates de la conscience; Matière et mémoire*. This movement is closely related to that of *Pragmatism*. See under § 203.

agnostic is in the paradoxical position of one who knows of an unknowable world. Present-day naturalism is more circumspect.<sup>7</sup> It has interested itself in bringing to light that in the very procedure of science which, because it predetermines what nature shall be, cannot be included within nature. To this interest is due the rediscovery of the rational foundations of science. It was already known in the seventeenth century that exact science does not differ radically from mathematics, as mathematics does not differ radically from logic. Mathematics and mechanics are now being submitted to a critical examination which reveals the definitions and implications upon which they rest, and the general relation of these to the fundamental elements and necessities of thought.<sup>7</sup>

<sup>7</sup> Cf. Bertrand Russell: *Principles of Mathematics*, Vol I. Among the more important writings of this movement are the following: Giuseppe Peano: *Formularie de Mathématique*, published by the *Rivista di matematica*, Tom. I-IV. Richard Dedekind: *Was sind und was sollen die Zahlen?* Georg Cantor: *Grundlagen einer allgemeinen Mannigfaltigkeitslehre*. Louis Couturat: *De l'Infini Mathématique*, and articles in *Revue de Metaphysique et de Morale*. A. N. Whitehead: *A Treatise on Universal Algebra*. Heinrich Hertz: *Die Prinzipien der Mechanik*. Henri Poincaré: *La Science et l'Hypothèse*. For the bearing of these investigations on philosophy, see Royce: *The Sciences of the Ideal*, in *Science*, Vol. XX, No. 510.

§ 203. This rationalistic tendency in natural-  
Recognition ism is balanced by a tendency which is  
of the Will.  
Pragmatism. more empirical, but equally subversive  
of the old ultra-naturalism. Goethe once wrote:

"I have observed that I hold that thought to be *true*  
which is *fruitful for me*. . . . When I know my  
relation to myself and to the outer world, I say that I  
possess the truth."

Similarly, it is now frequently observed that all knowledge is *humanly fruitful*, and it is proposed that this shall be regarded as the very criterion of truth. According to this principle science as a whole, even knowledge as a whole, is primarily a human utility. The nature which science defines is an artifact or construct. It is designed to express briefly and conveniently what man may practically expect from his environment. This tendency is known as *pragmatism*. It ranges from systematic doctrines, reminiscent of Fichte, which seek to define practical needs and deduce knowledge from them, to the more irresponsible utterances of those who liken science to "shorthand,"<sup>8</sup> and mathematics to a game of chess. In any case pragmatism attributes to nature a certain dependence on will, and therefore implies, even when it

<sup>8</sup> The term used by Karl Pearson in his *Grammar of Science*.

does not avow, that will with its peculiar principles or values cannot be reduced to the terms of nature. In short, it would be more true to say that nature expresses will, than that will expresses nature.<sup>9</sup>

§ 204. Such, then, is the contemporary eclecticism as respects the central problem of meta-  
*Summary, and physics.* There are *naturalistic* and *in-*  
*Translation to*  
*Epistemology.* *Individualistic* tendencies in *absolutism*; *rationalistic* and *ethical* tendencies in *naturalism*; and finally the independent and spontaneous movements of *personal idealism* and *pragmatism*.

Since the rise of the Kantian and post-Kantian philosophy, metaphysics and epistemology have maintained relations so intimate that the present state of the former cannot be characterized without some reference to the present state of the latter. Indeed, the very issues upon which meta-

<sup>9</sup> The important English writings of the recent independent movement known as *pragmatism* are: C. S. Peirce: *Illustrations of the Logic of Science*, in *Popular Science Monthly*, Vol. XII. W. James: *The Pragmatic Method*, in *Journal of Philosophy, Psychology, and Scientific Methods*, Vol. I; *Humanism and Truth*, in *Mind*, Vol. XIII, N. S.; *The Essence of Humanism*, in *Jour. of Phil., Psych., and Sc. Meth.*, Vol. II (with bibliography); *The Will to Believe*. John Dewey: *Studies in Logical Theory*. W. Caldwell: *Pragmatism*, in *Mind*, Vol. XXV., N. S. See also literature on *personal idealism*, § 201. A similar tendency has appeared in France in Bergson, LeRoy, Milhaud, and in Germany in Simmel.

physicians divide are most commonly those provoked by the problem of knowledge. The counter-tendencies of naturalism and absolutism are always connected, and often coincide with, the epistemological opposition between empiricism, which proclaims perception, and rationalism, which proclaims reason, to be the proper organ of knowledge. The other great epistemological controversy does not bear so direct and simple a relation to the central metaphysical issues, and must be examined on its own account.

§ 205. The point of controversy is the dependence or independence of the object of knowledge on the state of knowledge; idealism maintaining that reality is the knower or his content of mind, realism, that being known is a circumstance which appertains to some reality, without being the indispensable condition of reality as such. Now the sophisticated thought of the present age exhibits a tendency on the part of these opposite doctrines to approach and converge. It has been already remarked that the empirical idealism of the Berkeleyan type could not avoid transcending itself. Hume, who omitted Berkeley's active spirits, no longer had any subjective seat or

*The Antagonistic Doctrines of Realism and Idealism. Realistic Tendency in Empirical Idealism.*

sciousness, and, upon epistemological grounds, to lay great stress upon the necessity of the union of the parts of experience within an enveloping self. But absolute idealism has much at heart the overcoming of relativism, and the absolute is defined in order to meet the demand for a being that shall not have the cognitive deficiencies of an object of finite thought. So it is quite possible for this philosophy, while maintaining its traditions on the whole, to abandon the term *self* to the finite subject, and regard its absolute as a system of rational and universal principles—self-sufficient because externally independent and internally necessary. Hence the renewed study of categories as logical, mathematical, or mechanical principles, and entirely apart from their being the acts of a thinking self.

Furthermore, it has been recognized that the general demand of idealism is met when reality is regarded as not outside of or other than knowledge, whatever be true of the question of dependence. Thus the conception of *experience* is equally convenient here, in that it signifies what is immediately present in knowledge, without affirming it to consist in being so presented.<sup>11</sup>

<sup>11</sup> Cf. F. H. Bradley: *Appearance and Reality*.

§ 207. And at this point idealism is met by a latter-day realism. The traditional modern real-  
Idealistic Tendencies in Realism. The Immanence Philosophy. ism springing from Descartes was dualistic. It was supposed that reality in itself was essentially extra-mental, and thus under the necessity of being either represented or misrepresented in thought. But the one of these alternatives is dogmatic, in that thought can never test the validity of its relation to that which is perpetually outside of it; while the other is agnostic, providing only for the knowledge of a world of appearance, an improper knowledge that is in fact not knowledge at all.

But realism is not necessarily dualistic, since it requires only that being shall not be dependent upon being known. Furthermore, since empiricism is congenial to naturalism, it is an easy step to say that nature is directly known in perception. This first takes the form of positivism, or the theory that only such nature as can be directly known can be really known. But this agnostic provision for an unknown world beyond, inevitably falls away and leaves *reality as that which is directly known, but not conditioned by knowledge.* Again the term *experience* is the most useful, and provides a common ground for *idealistic realism*.

with *realistic idealism*. A new epistemological movement makes this conception of experience its starting-point. What is known as the *immanence philosophy* defines reality as experience, and means by experience the subject matter of all knowledge—not defined as such, but regarded as capable of being such. Experience is conceived to be *both in and out* of selves, cognition being but one of the special systems into which experience may enter.<sup>12</sup>

§ 208. Does this eclecticism of the age open any philosophical prospect? Is it more than a general compromise—a confession of failure on the part of each and every radical and clear-cut doctrine of metaphysics and epistemology? There is no final answer to such a question short of an in-

The Interpretation of Tradition as the Basis for a New Construction.

<sup>12</sup> Cf. Carstanjen: *Richard Avenarius, and his General Theory of Knowledge, Empiriocriticism*. Translation by H. Bosanquet, in *Mind*, Vol. VI, N. S. Also James: *Does Consciousness Exist?* and *A World of Pure Experience*, in *Jour. of Phil., Psych., and Sc. Meth.*, Vol. I; *The Thing and its Relations*, *ibid.*, Vol. II.

The standard literature of this movement is unfortunately not available in English. Among the more important writings are: R. Avenarius: *Kritik der reinen Erfahrung*; *Der menschliche Weltbegriff*, and other works. Joseph Petzoldt: *Einführung in die Philosophie der reinen Erfahrung*. Ernst Mach: *Die Analyse der Empfindung und das Verhältniss des Physischen zum Psychischen*, 2. Aufl. Wilhelm Schuppe: *Grund-*

dependent construction, and such procedure would exceed the scope of the present discussion. But there is an evident interpretation of tradition that suggests a possible basis for such construction.

§ 209. Suppose it to be granted that the categories of nature are quite self-sufficient. This would mean that there might conceivably be a strictly physical order, governed only by mechanical principles, and by the more general logical and mathematical principles. The body of physical science so extended as to include such general conceptions as identity, difference, number, quality, space, and time, is the account of such an order. This order need have no value, and need not be known. But reality as a whole is evidently not such a strictly physical order, for the definition of the physical order involves the rejection of many of the most familiar aspects of experience, such as its value and its being known in conscious selves. Materialism, in that it proposes to conceive the whole of reality as physical, must attempt to re-

*riss der Erkenntnisstheorie und Logik.* Friedrich Carstanjen: *Einführung in die "Kritik der reinen Erfahrung"*—an exposition of Avenarius. Also articles by the above, R. Willy, R. v. Schubert-Soldern, and others, in the *Vierteljahrsschrift für wissenschaftliche Philosophie*.

duce the residuum to physical terms, and with no hope of success. Goodness and knowledge cannot be explained as mass and force, or shown to be mechanical necessities.

§ 210. Are we then to conclude that reality is not physical, and look for other terms to which we may reduce physical terms? There is no lack of such other terms. Indeed, we could as fairly have *begun* elsewhere.  
Truth of Psychical Relations, but Impossibility of General Reduction to Them. Thus some parts of experience compose the consciousness of the individual, and are said to be known by him. Experience so contained is connected by the special relation of being known together. But this relation is quite indifferent to physical, moral, and logical relations. Thus we may be conscious of things which are physically disconnected, morally repugnant, and logically contradictory, or in all of these respects utterly irrelevant. Subjectivism, in that it proposes to conceive the whole of reality as consciousness, must attempt to reduce physical, moral, and logical relations to that co-presence in consciousness from which they are so sharply distinguished in their very definition. The historical failure of this attempt was inevitable.

§ 211. But there is at least one further start-

ing-point, the one adopted by the most subtle and elaborate of all reconstructive philosophies.

Truth of  
Logical and  
Ethical Prin-  
ciples

Validity of  
Ideal of  
Perfection,  
but Impossi-  
bility of De-  
ducing the  
Whole of Ex-  
perience  
from it

Logical necessities are as evidently real as bodies or selves. It is possible to define general types of inference, as well as compact and internally necessary systems such as those of mathematics. There is a perfectly distinguishable strain of pure rationality in the universe. Whether or not it be possible to conceive a pure rationality as self-subsistent, inasmuch as there are degrees it is at any rate possible to conceive of a maximum of rationality. But similarly there are degrees of moral goodness. It is possible to define with more or less exactness a morally perfect person, or an ideal moral community. Here again it may be impossible that pure and unalloyed goodness should constitute a universe of itself. But that a maximum of goodness, with all of the accessories which it might involve, should be thus self-subsistent, is quite conceivable. It is thus possible to define an absolute and perfect order, in which logical necessity, the interest of thought, or moral goodness, the interest of will, or both together, should be realized to the maximum. Absolutism conceives real-

ity under the form of this ideal, and attempts to reconstruct experience accordingly. But is the prospect of success any better than in the cases of materialism and subjectivism? It is evident that the ideal of logical necessity is due to the fact that certain parts of knowledge approach it more closely than others. Thus mechanics contains more that is arbitrary than mathematics, and mathematics more than logic. Similarly, the theory of the evolution of the planetary system, in that it requires the assumption of particular distances and particular masses for the parts of the primeval nebula, is more arbitrary than rational dynamics. It is impossible, then, in view of the parts of knowledge which belong to the lower end of the scale of rationality, to regard reality as a whole as the maximum of rationality; for either a purely dynamical, a purely mathematical, or a purely logical, realm would be more rational. The similar disproof of the moral perfection of reality is so unmistakable as to require no elucidation. It is evident that even where natural necessities are not antagonistic to moral proprieties, they are at any rate indifferent to them.

§ 212. But thus far no reference has been made to error and to evil. These are the terms which

the ideals of rationality and goodness must repudiate if they are to retain their meaning. Never-  
Error and Evil theless experience contains them and  
Cannot be psychology describes them. We have  
Reduced to  
the Ideal already followed the efforts which absolute idealism has made to show that logical perfection requires error, and that moral perfection requires evil. Is it conceivable that such efforts should be successful? Suppose a higher logic to make the principle of contradiction the very bond of rationality. What was formerly error is now indispensable to truth. But what of the new error—the unbalanced and mistaken thesis, the unresolved antithesis, the scattered and disconnected terms of thought? These fall outside the new truth as surely as the old error fell outside the old truth. And the case of moral goodness is precisely parallel. The higher goodness may be so defined as to require failure and sin. Thus it may be maintained that there can be no true success without struggle, and no true spiritual exaltation except through repentance. But what of failure unredeemed, sin unrepented, evil uncompensated and unresolved? Nothing has been gained after all but a new definition of goodness—and a new definition of evil. And this is an ethical, not a

metaphysical question. The problem of evil, like the problem of error, is as far from solution as ever. Indeed, the very urgency of these problems is due to metaphysical absolutism. For this philosophy defines the universe as a perfect unity. Measured by the standard of such an ideal universe, the parts of finite experience take on a fragmentary and baffling character which they would not otherwise possess. The absolute perfection must by definition both determine and exclude the imperfect. Thus absolutism bankrupts the universe by holding it accountable for what it can never pay.

§ 213. If the attempt to construct experience in the special terms of some part of experience be

*Collective Character of the Universe as a Whole.* abandoned, how is reality to be defined? It is evident that in that case there can be no definition of reality as such. It must be regarded as a collection of all elements, relations, principles, systems, that compose it. All truths will be true of it, and it will be the subject of all truths. Reality is at least physical, psychical, moral, and rational. That which is physical is not necessarily moral or psychical, but may be either or both of these. Thus it is a commonplace of experience that what has bulk and

weight may or may not be good, and may or may not be known. Similarly, that which is psychical may or may not be physical, moral, or rational; and that which is moral or rational may or may not be physical and psychical. There is, then, an indeterminism in the universe, a mere coincidence of principles, in that it contains physical, psychical, moral, logical orders, without being in all respects either a physical, a psychical, a moral, or a logical necessity.<sup>13</sup> Reality or experience itself is neutral in the sense of being exclusively predetermined by no one of the several systems it contains. But the different systems of experience retain their specific and proper natures, without the compromise which is involved in all attempts to extend some one until it shall embrace them all. If such a universe seems inconceivably desultory and chaotic, one may always remind one's self by directly consulting experience that it is not only found immediately and unreflectively, but returned to and lived in after every theoretical excursion.

§ 214. But what implications for life would be

<sup>13</sup> It is not, of course, denied that there may be other orders, such as, *e. g.*, an aesthetic order; or that there may be definite relations between these orders, such as, *e. g.*, the psycho-physical relation.

contained in such a philosophy? Even if it be theoretically clarifying, through being hospitable to all differences and adequate to the multifarious demands of experience, is it not on that very account morally dreary and stultifying? Is not its refusal to establish the universe upon moral foundations destructive both of the validity of goodness, and of the incentive to its attainment? Certainly not—if the validity of goodness be determined by criteria of worth, and if the incentive to goodness be the possibility of making that which merely exists, or is necessary, also good.

This philosophy does not, it is true, define the good, but it makes ethics autonomous, thus distinguishing the good which it defines, and saving it from compromise with matter-of-fact, and logical or mechanical necessity. The criticism of life is founded upon an independent basis, and affords justification of a selective and exclusive moral idealism. Just because it is not required that the good shall be held accountable for whatever is real, the ideal can be kept pure and intrinsically worthy. The analogy of logic is most illuminating. If it be insisted that whatever exists is logically necessary, logical necessity must be made to embrace

that from which it is distinguished by definition, such as contradiction, mere empirical existence, and error. The consequence is a logical chaos which has in truth forfeited the name of logic. Similarly a goodness defined to make possible the deduction from it of moral evil or moral indifference loses the very distinguishing properties of goodness. The consequence is an ethical neutrality which invalidates the moral will. A metaphysical neutrality, on the other hand, although denying that reality as such is predestined to morality—and thus affording no possibility of an ethical absolutism—becomes the true ground for an ethical purism.

§ 215. But, secondly, there can be no lack of incentive to goodness in a universe which, though not all-good, is in no respect incapable of becoming good. That which is mechanically or logically necessary, and that which is psychically present, *may be good*. And what can the realization of goodness mean if not that what is natural and necessary, actual and real, shall be also good. The world is not good, will not be good, merely through being what it is, but is or shall be made good through the accession of goodness. It is this belief that the real is not

The Incentive to Goodness.

necessarily, but may be, good; that the ideal is not necessarily, but may be, realized; which has inspired every faith in action. Philosophically it is only a question of permitting such faith to be sincere, or condemning it as shallow. If the world be made good through good-will, then the faith of moral action is rational; but if the world be good because whatever is must be good, then moral action is a tread-mill, and its attendant and animating faith only self-deception. Moral endeavor is the elevation of physical and psychical existence to the level of goodness.

"Relate the inheritance to life, convert the tradition into a servant of character, draw upon the history for support in the struggles of the spirit, declare a war of extermination against the total evil of the world, and then raise new armies and organize into fighting force every belief available in the faith that has descended to you."<sup>14</sup>

Evil is here a practical, not a theoretical, problem. It is not to be solved by thinking it good, for to think it good is to deaden the very nerve of action; but by destroying it and replacing it with good.

#### § 216. The justification of faith is in the prom-

<sup>14</sup> Quoted from George A. Gordon: *The New Epoch for Faith*, p. 27.

ise of reality. For what, after all, woul be the meaning of a faith which declares that all things, good, bad, and indifferent, are everlasting<sup>The Justification of Faith.</sup> ingly and necessarily what they are—even if it were concluded on philosophical grounds to call that ultimate necessity good. Faith has interests; faith is faith *in* goodness or beauty. Then what more just and potent cause of despair than the thought that the ideal must be held accountable for error, ugliness, and evil, or for the indifferent necessities of nature?<sup>15</sup> Are ideals to be prized the less, or believed in the less, when there is no ground for their impeachment? How much more hopeful for what is worth the hoping, that nature should discern ideals and take some steps toward realizing them, than that ideals should have created nature—such as it is! How much better a report can we give of nature for its ideals, than of the ideals for their handiwork, if it be nature! Emerson writes:

“Suffice it for the joy of the universe that we have not arrived at a wall, but at interminable oceans. Our life seems not present so much as prospective; not for the affairs on which it is wasted, but as a hint of this vast-flowing vigor. Most of life seems to be mere ad-

<sup>15</sup> Cf. James: *The Will to Believe*, essay on *The Dilemma of Determinism*, *passim*.

vertisement of faculty; information is given us not to sell ourselves cheap; that we are very great. So, in particulars, our greatness is always in a tendency or direction, not in an action. It is for us to believe in the rule, not in the exception. The noble are thus known from the ignoble. So in accepting the leading of the sentiments, it is, not what we believe concerning the immortality of the soul or the like, but *the universal impulse to believe*, that is the material circumstance and is the principal fact in the history of the globe.”<sup>16</sup>

§ 217. If God be rid of the imputation of moral evil and indifference, he may be *intrinsically worshipful*, because regarded under the and Service of God. form of the highest ideals. And if the great cause of goodness be in fact at stake, God may both command the adoration of men through his purity, and reënforce their virtuous living through representing to them that realization of goodness in the universe at large which both contains and exceeds their individual endeavor.

§ 218. Bishop Berkeley wrote in his “Commonplace Book”:

“My speculations have the same effect as visiting foreign countries: in the end I return where I was before, but my heart at ease, and enjoying life with new satisfaction.”

If it be essential to the meaning of philosophy that it should issue from life, it is equally essen-

<sup>16</sup> *Essays, Second Series*, p. 75.

ial that it should return to life. But this con-  
nection of philosophy with life does not mean its  
the Philoso-  
her and the  
standards of  
the Market-  
place. reduction to the terms of life as con-  
ceived in the market-place. Philosophy  
cannot emanate from life, and quicken  
life, without elevating and ennobling it, and will  
herefore always be incommensurable with life  
narrowly conceived. Hence the philosopher must  
always be as little understood by men of the street  
as was Thales by the Thracian handmaiden. He  
has an innocence and a wisdom peculiar to his  
perspective.

"When he is reviled, he has nothing personal to say  
in answer to the civilities of his adversaries, for he knows  
no scandals of anyone, and they do not interest him;  
and therefore he is laughed at for his sheepishness; and  
when others are being praised and glorified, he cannot  
help laughing very sincerely in the simplicity of his heart;  
and this again makes him look like a fool. When he  
hears a tyrant or king eulogized, he fancies that he is  
listening to the praises of some keeper of cattle—a swine-  
herd, or shepherd, or cowherd, who is being praised for  
the quantity of milk which he squeezes from them; and  
he remarks that the creature whom they tend, and out  
of whom they squeeze the wealth, is of a less tractable  
and more insidious nature. Then, again, he observes  
that the great man is of necessity as ill-mannered and  
ineducated as any shepherd, for he has no leisure, and  
he is surrounded by a wall, which is his mountain-pen.  
Hearing of enormous landed proprietors of ten thousand

acres and more, our philosopher deems this to be a trifle, because he has been accustomed to think of the whole earth; and when they sing the praises of family, and say "that some one is a gentleman because he has had seven generations of wealthy ancestors, he thinks that their sentiments only betray the dulness and narrowness of vision of those who utter them, and who are not educated enough to look at the whole, nor to consider that every man has had thousands and thousands of progenitors, and among them have been rich and poor, kings and slaves, Hellenes and barbarians, many times over."<sup>17</sup>

It is not to be expected that the opinion of the "narrow, keen, little, legal mind" should appreciate the philosophy which has acquired the "music of speech," and hymns "the true life which is lived by immortals or men blessed of heaven." Complacency cannot understand reverence, nor secularism, religion.

§ 219. If we may believe the report of a temporary philosopher, the present age is made insensible to the meaning of life through preoccupation with its very achievements:

"The world of finite interests and objects has rounded itself, as it were, into a separate whole, within which the mind of man can fortify itself, and live *securus aduersus deos*, in independence of the infinite. In the

<sup>17</sup> Plato: *Theætetus*, 174-175. Translation by Jowett.

sphere of *thought*, there has been forming itself an ever-increasing body of science, which, tracing out the relation of finite things to finite things, never finds it necessary to seek for a beginning or an end to its infinite series of phenomena, and which meets the claims of theology with the saying of the astronomer, 'I do not need that hypothesis.' In the sphere of *action*, again, the complexity of modern life presents a thousand isolated interests, crossing each other in ways too subtle to trace out—interests commercial, social, and political—in pursuing one or other of which the individual may find ample occupation for his existence, without ever feeling the need of any return upon himself, or seeing any reason to ask himself whether this endless striving has any meaning or object beyond itself."<sup>18</sup>

§ 220. There is no dignity in living except it be in the solemn presence of the universe; and <sup>The Value of</sup> <sub>Contemplation for Life.</sub> only contemplation can summon such a presence. Moreover, the sessions must be not infrequent, for memory is short and visions fade. Truth does not require, however, to be followed out of the world. There is a speculative detachment from life which is less courageous, even if more noble, than worldliness. Such is Dante's exalted but mediæval intellectualism.

"And it may be said that (as true friendship between men consists in each wholly loving the other) the true philosopher loves every part of wisdom, and wisdom

<sup>18</sup> E. Caird: *Literature and Philosophy*, Vol. I, pp. 218-219.

every part of the philosopher, inasmuch as she draws all to herself, and allows no one of his thoughts to wander to other things."

Even though, as Aristotle thought, pure contemplation be alone proper to the gods in their perfection and blessedness, for the sublunary world this is less worthy than that balance and unity of faculty which distinguished the humanity of the Greek.

"Then," writes Thucydides, "we are lovers of the beautiful, yet simple in our tastes, and we cultivate the mind without loss of manliness. Wealth we employ, not for talk and ostentation, but when there is a real use for it. To avoid poverty with us is no disgrace; the true disgrace is in doing nothing to avoid it. An Athenian citizen does not neglect the State because he takes care of his own household; and even those of us who are engaged in business have a very fair idea of politics. We alone regard a man who takes no interest in public affairs not as a harmless, but as a useless character; and if few of us are originators, we are all sound judges, of a policy. The great impediment to action is, in our opinion, not discussion, but the want of that knowledge which is gained by discussion preparatory to action. For we have a peculiar power of thinking before we act, and of acting too, whereas other men are courageous from ignorance, but hesitate upon reflection."<sup>19</sup>

Thus life may be broadened and deepened without being thin and ineffectual. As the civil

<sup>19</sup> Translation by Jowett. Quoted by Laurie in his *Pre-Christian Education*, p. 213.

community is related to the individual's private interests, so the community of the universe is related to the civil community. There is a citizenship in this larger community which requires a wider and more generous interest, rooted in a deeper and more quiet reflection. The world, however, is not to be left behind, but served with a new sense of proportion, with the peculiar fortitude and reverence which are the proper fruits of philosophy.

"This is that which will indeed dignify and exalt knowledge, if contemplation and action may be more nearly and straitly conjoined and united together than they have been; a conjunction like unto that of the two highest planets: Saturn, the planet of rest and contemplation, and Jupiter, the planet of civil society and action."<sup>20</sup>

<sup>20</sup> Bacon: *Advancement of Learning*, Book I.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

The references contained in this bibliography have been selected on the score of availability in English for the general reader and beginning student of philosophy. But I have sought wherever possible to include passages from the great philosophers and men of letters. These are placed first in the list, followed by references to contemporary writers and secondary sources.

### CHAPTER I, THE PRACTICAL MAN AND THE PHILOSOPHER.

PLATO: *Republic*, especially Book VII. Translations by Jowett and Vaughan. *Theaetetus*, 172 ff. Translation by Jowett.

ARISTOTLE: *Ethica*, Book X. Translation by Welldon.

MARCUS AURELIUS. *Thoughts*. Translation by Long.

EPICETETUS: *Discourses*. Translation by Long.

BACON: *The Advancement of Learning*.

EMERSON: *Representative Men—Plato; or the Philosopher. Conduct of Life—Culture. Essays, Second Series—Experience.*

---

ROYCE, JOSIAH: *Spirit of Modern Philosophy*. Introduction.

HIBBEN, J. G.: *Problems of Philosophy*. Introduction.

### CHAPTER II, POETRY AND PHILOSOPHY.

PLATO: *Republic*, Books II and III. Translation by Jowett.  
(Criticism of the poets as demoralizing.)

WORDSWORTH: *Observations Prefixed to the Second Edition of the Lyrical Ballads*.

SHELLEY: *Defence of Poetry*.

- EVERETT, C. C.: *Poetry, Comedy, and Duty.* (Discussion of the philosophy of poetry.) *Essays, Theological and Literary.* (On the poetry of Emerson, Goethe, Tennyson; Browning.)
- CAIRD, EDWARD: *Literature and Philosophy.* (Wordsworth, Dante, Goethe, etc.)
- ROYCE, JOSIAH: *Studies of Good and Evil.* Essay on Tennyson and Pessimism.
- SANTAYANA, GEORGE: *Poetry and Religion.* (Philosophy of poetry; Greek poetry, Shakespeare, etc.)
- SNEATH, E. H.: *Philosophy in Poetry: A Study of Sir John Davies's Poem, "Nosce Te ipsum."*

### CHAPTERS III AND IV, RELIGION.

- PLATO: *Republic*, Book III. Translations by Jowett and Vaughan. (Criticism of religion from the standpoint of morality and politics.)
- ST. AUGUSTINE: *Confessions.* Translation by Pusey. (Document of religious experience.)
- THOMAS À KEMPIS: *Imitation of Christ.* Translation by Stanhope. (Medieval programme of personal religion.)
- SPINOZA: *Theological-Political Treatise.* Translation by Elwes. (One of the first great pleas for religious liberty and one of the first attempts to define the essential in religion.)
- KANT: *Critique of Pure Reason—The Canon of Pure Reason.* Translation by Max Muller. *Critique of Practical Reason.* Translation by Abbott in *Theory of Ethics.* (Defines religion as the province of faith, distinguishes it from knowledge, and relates it to morality.)
- SCHLEIERMACHER: *On Religion. Speeches to its Cultured Despisers.* Translation by Oman. (Ponderous, dogmatic in its philosophy, but profound and sympathetic in its understanding of religion.)

ARNOLD: *Literature and Dogma.* (On the essence of religion as exemplified in Judaism and Christianity.)

---

SABATIER, A.: *Outlines of a Philosophy of Religion based on Psychology and History.* Translation by Seed. *Religions of Authority and the Religion of the Spirit.* Translation by Houghton. (These books emphasize the essential importance of the believer's attitude to God.)

JAMES, WILLIAM: *The Varieties of Religious Experience.* (A rich storehouse of religion, sympathetically interpreted.)

EVERETT, C. C.: *The Psychological Elements of Religious Faith.* (A study in the definition and meaning of religion.)

CAIRD, EDWARD: *Evolution of Religion.* (Indoctrinated with the author's idealistic philosophy.)

FIELDING, H.: *The Hearts of Men.* (A plea for the universal religion. Special feeling for Indian religions.)

HARNACK, A.: *What is Christianity?* Translation by Saunders. (Attempt to define the essence of Christianity.)

PALMER, G. H.: *The Field of Ethics*, Chapters V and VI. (On the relation of ethics and religion.)

BROWN, W. A.: *The Essence of Christianity.* (Special study of the definition of religion.)

JASTROW, M.: *The Study of Religion.* (Method of history and psychology of religion.)

SMITH, W. ROBERTSON: *The Religion of the Semites.* (Excellent study of tribal religions.)

CLARKE, W. N.: *What Shall We Think of Christianity?* (An interpretation of Christianity.)

LEUBA, J. H.: *Introduction to a Pyschological Study of Religion.* In *The Monist*, Vol. XI, p. 195.

STARBUCK, E. D.: *The Pyschology of Religion.*

CHAPTER V, THE PHILOSOPHICAL CRITICISM  
OF SCIENCE.\*

PLATO: *Republic*, Book VII, 526 ff. Translations by Jowett and Vaughan. *Phaedo*, 96 ff. Translation\* by Jowett.

BERKELEY: *Alciphron*, the Fourth Dialogue. *Siris*, especially 234-264. (On the failure of the scientist to grasp the deeper truth respecting causes and substances.)

DESCARTES: *Discourse on Method*. Translation by Veitch.

SPINOZA: *On the Improvement of the Understanding*. Translation by Elwes.

KANT: *Critique of Pure Reason*—*Transcendental Ästhetic* and *Transcendental Analytic*. Translation by Max Müller. (Studies of the Method of Science.)

---

WARD, JAMES: *Naturalism and Agnosticism*. (Full but clear account of recent development of natural science, and criticism of its use as philosophy.)

MACH, ERNST: *Science of Mechanics*. (Historical and methodological.)

JAMES, WILLIAM: *Principles of Psychology*, Vol. II, Chap. xxviii. (Emphasizes the practical interest underlying science.)

ROYCE, JOSIAH: *The World and the Individual, Second Series, Man and Nature*. (Interpretation of the province of natural science from the stand-point of absolute idealism.)

PEARSON, KARL: *The Grammar of Science*. (The limits of science from the scientific stand-point.)

CLIFFORD, W. K.: *Lectures and Essays: On the Aims and Instruments of Scientific Thought; The Philosophy of the Pure Sciences; On the Ethics of Belief*.

\* For further contemporary writings on this topic, see foot-notes under §§ 199, 200, 203.

- HUXLEY, T. H.: *Method and Results.* (The positivistic position.)
- MUENSTERBERG, HUGO: *Psychology and Life.* (Epistemological limitations of natural science applied to psychology, from idealistic stand-point.)
- FULLERTON, G. E.: *A System of Metaphysics*, Part II.
- TAYLOR, A. E.: *Elements of Metaphysics*, Book III.

#### CHAPTERS VI AND VII, THE SPECIAL PROBLEMS OF PHILOSOPHY.

PLATO: *Dialogues*, especially *Protagoras* and *Theaetetus*.  
Translation by Jowett. (The actual genesis of special problems.)

---

KUELPE, OSWALD: *Introduction to Philosophy*. Translation by Pillsbury and Titchener. (Full and accurate account of the traditional terms and doctrines of philosophy.)

HIBBEN, J. G.: *Problems of Philosophy*. (Brief and elementary.)

SIDGWICK, HENRY: *Philosophy, its Scope and Relations*.

PAULSEN, FRIEDRICH: *Introduction to Philosophy*. Translation by Thilly.

BALDWIN, J. M.: *Dictionary of Philosophy*. (Full, and convenient for reference.)

FERNIER, J. F.: *Lectures on Greek Philosophy*. (Interpretation of the beginning and early development of philosophy.)

BURNET, J.: *Early Greek Philosophy*. Translation of the sources.

FAIRBANKS, A.: *The First Philosophers of Greece*.

GOMPERZ, TH.: *Greek Thinkers*, Vol. I. Translation by Magnus. (On the first development of philosophical problems.)

PALMER, G. H.: *The Field of Ethics*. (On the relations of the ethical problem.)

PUFFER, ETHEL: *The Psychology of Beauty*. (On the relations of the æsthetical problem.)

## CHAPTER VIII, NATURALISM.\*

- LUCRETIUS: *On the Nature of Things*. Translation by Munro.  
 (Early materialism.)
- HOBBS: *Metaphysical System*. Edited by Calkins. *Leviathan*, Part I. (Modern materialism.)
- 
- BUECHNER, LOUIS: *Force and Matter*. Translation by Collingwood. (Nineteenth century materialism.)
- JANET, PAUL: *Materialism of the Present Day*. Translation by Masson.
- LANGE, F. A.: *History of Materialism*. Translation by Thomas.
- HAECKEL, ERNST: *The Riddle of the Universe*. Translation by McCabe. ("Monism of Energy.")
- CLIFFORD, W. K.: *Lectures and Essays: The Ethics of Belief; Cosmic Emotion; Body and Mind*. (Positivism.)
- HUXLEY, T. H.: *Evolution and Ethics; Prologomena*. (Distinguishes between the moral and natural.)  
*Science and Hebrew Tradition; Science and Christian Tradition*. (Controversies of the naturalist with Gladstone and Duke of Argyle.)
- SPENCER, HERBERT: *First Principles*. (The systematic evolutionary philosophy.) *Principles of Ethics*. (Ethics of naturalism.) *The Nature and Reality of Religion*. (Controversy with Frederick Harrison.)
- BALFOUR, A. J.: *Foundations of Belief*, Part I. (On the religious, moral, and æsthetic consequences of naturalism.)
- PATER, WALTER: *Marius the Epicurean*. (Refined hedonism.)
- ROMANES, G. J.: *Thoughts on Religion*. (Approached from stand-point of science.)

\* For histories of philosophy, see supplementary bibliography at end.

- BENTHAM, J.: *Introduction to the Principles of Morals and Legislation.* (Utilitarian.)  
 STEPHEN, L.: *Science of Ethics.* (Evolutionary and social.)

#### CHAPTER IX, SUBJECTIVISM.

- PLATO: *Theaetetus.* Translation by Jowett. (Exposition and criticism of Protagoras.)  
 BERKELEY: *Three Dialogues between Hylas and Philonous; Principles of Human Knowledge.*  
 HUME: *An Enquiry Concerning Human Understanding.*  
 SCHOPENHAUER: *The World as Will and Idea.* Translation by Haldane and Kemp.  
 MILL, J. S.: *An Examination of Sir William Hamilton's Philosophy,* X-XIII.
- 

- CLIFFORD, W. K.: *Lectures and Essays: On the Nature of Things in Themselves.* (Panpsychism.)  
 DEUSSEN, PAUL: *Elements of Metaphysics.* Translation by Duff. (Following Schopenhauer and Oriental philosophy.)  
 PAULSEN, FR.: *Introduction to Philosophy.* (Panpsychism.)  
 STRONG, C. A.: *Why the Mind Has a Body.* (Panpsychism.)  
 JAMES, WILLIAM: *Reflex Action and Therism,* in *The Will to Believe.* (Morality and religion of individualism.)

#### CHAPTER X, ABSOLUTE REALISM.

- PARMENIDES: *Fragments.* Arrangement and translation by Burnet or Fairbanks.  
 PLATO: *Republic,* Books VI and VII. Translations by Jowett and Vaughan. *Symposium, Phaedrus, Phaedo, Philebus.* Translation by Jowett.  
 ARISTOTLE\*: *Psychology.* Translations by Hammond and Wallace. *Ethics.* Translation by Welldon.

\* The Metaphysics of Aristotle, Fichte, and Hegel must be found by the English reader mainly in the secondary sources.

- SPINOZA: *Ethics*, especially Parts I and V. Translations by Elwes and Willis.
- LEIBNIZ: *Monadology*, and Selections. Translation by Latta.  
*Discourse on Metaphysics*. Translation by Montgomery.
- MARCUS AURELIUS: *Thoughts*. Translation by Long.
- EPICETETUS: *Discourses*. Translation by Long.
- 

- CAIRD, EDWARD: *The Evolution of Theology in the Greek Philosophers*. (The central conceptions of Plato and Aristotle.)
- JOACHIM: *A Study of the Ethics of Spinoza*.

#### CHAPTER XI, ABSOLUTE IDEALISM.

- DESCARTES: *Meditations*. Translation by Veitch.
- KANT: *Critique of Pure Reason*. Translation by Max Muller.  
*Critique of Practical Reason*. Translation by Abbott, in *Kant's Theory of Ethics*.
- FICHTE\*: *Science of Ethics*. Translation by Kroeger. *Popular Works: The Nature of the Scholar; The Vocation of Man; The Doctrine of Religion*. Translation by Smith.
- SCHILLER: *Aesthetic Letters, Essays, and Philosophical Letters*. Translation by Weiss. (Romanticism.)
- HEGEL\*: *Ethics*. Translation by Sterrett. *Logic*. Translation, with Introduction, by Wallace. *Philosophy of Mind*. Translation, with Introduction, by Wallace. *Philosophy of Religion*. Translation by Spiers and Sanderson. *Philosophy of Right*. Translation by Dyde.
- GREEN, T. H.: *Prolegomena to Ethics*.
- EMERSON: *The Conduct of Life—Fate. Essays, First Series—The Over-Soul; Circles. Essays, Second Series—The Poet; Experience; Nature*. (The appreciation of life consistent with absolute idealism.)
- WORDSWORTH: *Poems, passim*.
- COLERIDGE: *Aids to Reflection. The Friend*.

- ROYCE, J.: *Spirit of Modern Philosophy*. (Sympathetic exposition of Kant, Fichte, Romanticism, and Hegel.) *The Conception of God*. (The epistemological argument.) *The World and the Individual, First Series*. (Systematic development of absolute idealism; its moral and religious aspects.)
- CAIRD, EDWARD: *The Critical Philosophy of Kant*. (Exposition and interpretation from stand-point of later idealism.)
- EVERETT, C. C.: *Fichte's Science of Knowledge*.
- McTAGGART, J. M. E.: *Studies in Hegelian Dialectic. Studies in Hegelian Cosmology*.

#### SUPPLEMENTARY BIBLIOGRAPHY ON THE HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY.

##### I.—GENERAL.

- ROGERS: *Student's History of Philosophy*. (Elementary and clear; copious quotations.)
- WEBER: *History of Philosophy*. Translation by Thilly. (Comprehensive and compact.)
- WINDELBAND: *A History of Philosophy*. Translation by Tufts. (Emphasis upon the problems and their development.)
- ERDMANN: *History of Philosophy*. Translation edited by Hough; in three volumes. (Detailed and accurate exposition.)
- UEBERWEG: *A History of Philosophy*. Translation by Morris and Porter, in two volumes. (Very complete; excellent account of the literature.)

##### II.—SPECIAL PERIODS.

- FERRIER: *Lectures on Greek Philosophy*. (Excellent introduction.)
- MARSHALL: *Short History of Greek Philosophy*. (Brief and clear.)

- WINDELBAND: *History of Ancient Philosophy*. Translation by Cushman. (Very accurate and scholarly; also brief.)
- ZELLER: *Pre-Socratic Philosophy*. Translation by Alleyne. *Socrates and the Socratic Schools*. Translation by Reichel. (Full and accurate.)
- GOMPERZ: *Greek Thinkers*. Translated by Magnus, in four volumes. (Very full; especially on Plato. Goes no further than Plato.)
- BURNET: *Early Greek Philosophy*. (Translations of fragments, with commentary.)
- FAIRBANKS: *The First Philosophers of Greece*. (Translations of fragments, with commentary.)
- TURNER: *History of Philosophy*. (Excellent account of Scholastic philosophy.)
- ROYCE: *The Spirit of Modern Philosophy*. (Very illuminating introductory exposition of modern idealism.)
- FALCKENBERG: *History of Modern Philosophy*.
- HOEFFDING: *History of Modern Philosophy*. Translation by Meyer, in two volumes. (Full and good.)

## INDEX

- ABSOLUTE**, the, 307, 309, 332, 391, 392, 400, 404; being, 308; substance, 312; ideal, 326; spirit, 349 (*note*), 358 ff.; mind, 349 (*note*), 358, 380, 322 ff.
- ABSOLUTE IDEALISM**, chap. xi; general meaning, 177, 349 (*note*), 400; criticism of, 349, 365, 385, 411, 416; epistemology of, 368 ff.; as related to Kant, 380; direct argument for, 383; ethics of, 386 ff.; religion of, 390 ff.; of present day, 402 ff., 410.
- ABSOLUTE REALISM**, chap. x; general meaning, 306 (*note*), 400; epistemology of, 339; ethics of, 342; religion of, 346; criticism of, 338, 416.
- ABSTRACT**, the, 139.
- ACTIVITY**, 209, 285, 295.
- ÆSTHETICS**, 189.
- AGNOSTICISM**, 168, 252 ff.
- ANAXAGORAS**, 239; quoted, 162.
- ANAXIMANDER**, 224.
- ANSELM, SAINT**, 200.
- ANTHROPOMORPHISM**, 109.
- APPRECIATION**, 25, 402.
- ARISTOTLE**, in formal logic, 186; ethics of, 195, 345; psychology of, 208; philosophy of, 306, 332 ff.; and Plato, 333, 338; and Spinoza, 336; epistemology of, 339; religion of, 346, 429; on evil, 353.
- ATOMISM**, 166, 229. Also see under **LEUCIPPUS**, and **DEMOCRITUS**.
- ATTITUDE**, 62.
- ATTRIBUTE**, in Spinoza, 312 ff.
- AUGUSTINE, SAINT**, on communion with God, 68; on pietism, 195; his conception of self, 372.
- AUTOMATISM**, 248.
- BAAL**, religion of, 88.
- BACON, FRANCIS**, on thought and action, 430.
- BALFOUR, A. J.**, on materialism, 264.
- BEAUTY**, in æsthetics, 189; in Plato, 327, 332.
- BEING**, Eleatic conception of, 308 ff.
- BELIEF**, key to definition of religion, 58; general characters applied to religion, 59 ff.; in persons and dispositions, 62; examples of religions, 66 ff.; object of religions, 65, 82, 97; relation to logic, 182, 183.
- BENTHAM**, 262.
- BERKELEY**, on idealism, 176; relation to common-sense, 267; his refutation of material substance, 275 ff.; epistemology of, 277, 296, 369; theory of mathematics, 279; his spiritualism, 280, 284, 292; his conception of God, 284, 293; ethics of, 302; religion of, 304.
- BUDDHISM**, 78.
- CAUSE**, in science, 131; God as first, 203; of motion, 231 ff.; spirit as, 293 ff.
- CHRISTIANITY**, persistence of, 76; essence of, 86; development from Judaism, 94; ethics of, 195, 198, 386; idea of God in, 200 ff., 205; emphasis on self-consciousness in, 372.
- COMTE**, 115.
- CONTEMPLATION**, 428.
- CONVERSION**, 69 ff.
- CORPOREAL BEING**, 224; processes of, 225; Berkeley's critique of, 278; historical conceptions of, 229.

- COSMOLOGICAL PROOF, the, of God, 203.
- COSMOLOGY, general meaning of, 159; mechanism in, 161, 225; teleology in, 161.
- COSMOS, origin of, 242.
- CRITICAL METHOD, 319 ff.
- CYNICISM, 259.
- CYRENAICISM, 259.
- DANTE, as philosopher-poet, 42 ff.; general meaning of the *Divine Comedy*, 43; and Thomas Aquinas, 43, 46; his vision of the ways of God, 46; on contemplation, 428.
- DARWIN, 204.
- DEISM, 207.
- DEMOCRITUS, 247. Also see ATOMISM.
- DESCARTES, on function of philosophy, 154; dualism of, 272, 412; his theory of space and matter, 229; automatism of, 248; epistemology of, 341, 375; his conception of self, 374.
- DESCRIPTION, as method of science, 128.
- DIALECTIC, in Plato, 320; in Hegel, 361.
- DIogenes, 259.
- DOGMATISM, 167.
- DUALISM, general meaning, 162; of Descartes, 272, 412.
- DUTY, 196, 356, 360, 386.
- ECLECTICISM, contemporary, 398 ff., 413. See under PARMENIDES, and ZENO.
- EMERSON, on spirit, 359; on nature, 364; on absolute, 392; on necessity, 393; on faith, 424.
- EMPIRICISM, general meaning, 168; in logic, 187; in naturalism, 252 ff.; of Locke, 274; of Berkeley, 274 ff.
- ENERGY, development of, conception of, 236 ff.
- EPistemology, relation to metaphysics, 150; definition of, 168; fundamental problems of, 168, 172; argument for God from, 202; of naturalism, 248, 252 ff., 257; of Descartes, 273, 341, 375; of Berkeley, 277, 296; of absolute idealism, 339, 351, of Leibniz, 340, 341; of Plato, 340, 341; of Hume, 376; of Aristotle, 340, 341; of absolute idealism, 351, 368 ff.; of present day, 408 ff.
- ETERNAL, the, 309.
- ETHER, 230.
- ETHICS, relation to metaphysics, 151, 196 ff., 360; its origin in Socratic method, 181; definition of, 191; special problems and theories in, 191 ff.; of Socrates, 192, 194; of Aristotle, 195, 345; of naturalism, 258 ff.; of subjectivism, 293 ff.; of Schopenhauer, 299; argument for God from, 203; individualism in, 301; pluralism in, 302, 421; of Stoics and Spinoza, 342; Platonic, 342; of Kant, 386; of absolute idealism, 388.
- EUDEMONISM, 195.
- EVIL, PROBLFM OF, 317, 336, 339, 352, 365 ff.; in Greek philosophy, 352; in absolute idealism, 367, 414.
- EVOLUTION, of cosmos, 242 ff.; of morality, 262.
- EXPERIENCE, 410, 411, 412; analysis of, by Kant, 354.
- FAITH, 424; special interests of, 199. See also RELIGION and BELIEF.
- FERGUSON, CHAS., quoted, 265.
- FICHTE, 360, 402.
- FIELDING, H., quoted on religion, 59, 74.
- FORCE, development of conception of, 231 ff.
- FORM, in Aristotle, 334.
- FREEDOM, in ethics, 196, 388; meanings and theories, 211.
- God, as guarantee of ideals, 18, 425; personality of, 62, 108 ff.; St. Augustine's communion with, 68; presence of, 68;

- as a disposition from which consequences may be expected, 88; meaning of, in religion, 87; idea of, in Judaism and Christianity, 92; why historical, 102; social relation with, 103; the ontological proof of, 200; ethical and epistemological arguments for, 202; cosmological proof of, 203; teleological proof of, 204; relation to the world, in theism; pantheism and deism, 205 ff.; will of, 212; conception of, in Berkeley, 284, 293 ff.; conception and proof of, in Spinoza, 312 ff., 392, 393; conception of, in Plato, 331, 352, 391, 393; conception of, in Leibniz, 338, 353. Also see ABSOLUTE.
- GOETHE, on Spinoza, and on philosophy, 51; on pragmatism, 407.
- GOOD, the, theories of, in ethics, 191 ff.; and the real, 326 ff., 421 ff.
- GREEK, religion, in Homer and Lucretius, 89; ideals, 195, 198, 429.
- GREEN, T. H., quoted, 369, 385 (*note*).
- HAECKEL, quoted, 236, 266.
- HEDONISM, 192.
- HEGEL, on science, 129; philosophy of, 150, 361 ff.; relation to Kant, 381; on the absolute, 382; ethics of, 390.
- HERACLITUS, 308.
- HISTORY, philosophy of, in Hegel, 363.
- HOBES, his misconception of relations of philosophy and science, 115; quoted on ethics, 261.
- HOLBACH, 251, 252.
- HOMER, on Greek religion, 90.
- HUMANISM, 320, 404, 405.
- HUME, positivism of, 115, 377; phenomenism of, 283; and Descartes, 376.
- HUXLEY, quoted, 255, 266.
- HYLOZOISM, 225.
- IDEAL, the, in Plato, 326; validity of, 416.
- IDEALISM, various meanings of term, 173 (*note*); meaning of, as theory of knowledge, 175 ff., 409; of present day, 409 ff.; empirical, see SUBJECTIVISM, PHENOMENALISM, SPIRITUALISM; absolute, see ABSOLUTE IDEALISM.
- IDEALS, in life, 10 ff.; adoption of, 17 ff.
- IDEAS, the, in Plato, 329.
- IMAGINATION, in poetry, 99; place of, in religion, 80, 97 ff.; special functions of, in religion, 101 ff.; scope of, in religion, 105 ff.; and the personality of God, 110.
- IMITATIO CHRISTI, quoted, 68.
- IMMÄNNENCE THEORY, 412, 413.
- IMMORTALITY, 212.
- INDIVIDUALISM, 301, 320, 338, 404.
- INTUITIONISM, in ethics, 196.
- JAMES, WILLIAM, quoted on religion, 65, 71, 305.
- JUDAISM, development of, 92; and Christianity, 94.
- KANT, his transcendentalism, 177, 356; his critique of knowledge, 354 ff., 377 ff.; and absolute idealism, 380; ethics of, 386.
- KEPLER, quoted, 129.
- KNOWLEDGE, of the means in life, 8; of the end, 10; in poetry, 27 ff.; in religion, 82, 85, 97, 105; general theory of, on epistemology, 164 ff.; problem of source and criterion of, 168 ff.; problem of relation to its object, 172 ff., 277, 340, 351, 368 ff.; relation of logic to, 183 ff.; account of, in naturalism, 253 ff. Also see EPISTEMOLOGY.
- LA METTRIE, quoted, 250.
- LA PLACE, 242; quoted, 241.
- LEIBNIZ, on function of philosophy, 155; philosophy of, 333, 336 ff.; epistemology of, 339.

- LEUCIPPUS, quoted, 161.
- LIFE, as a starting-point for thought, 3; definition of, 5 ff.; and self-consciousness, 6; philosophy of 17 ff., 153; mechanical theory of, 244 ff.; return of philosophy to, 427 ff.; contemplation in, 428.
- LOCKE, epistemology of, 273.
- LOGIC, origin in Socratic method, 181; affiliations of, 182, 188; definition of, 183; parts of formal, 184 ff.; present tendencies in, 187 ff.; algebra of, 189.
- LUCRETIUS, his criticism of Greek religion, quoted, 89 ff.; on mechanism, 226, 240.
- McTAGGART, J. M. E., on Hegel, 367; on the absolute, 391.
- MACH, E., 283; on philosophy and science, 120.
- MALEBRANCHE, 376.
- MARCUS AURELIUS, 348.
- MATERIALISM, 254, 256; general meaning, 223, 414; development, 224 ff.; and science, 228; French, 249; theory of mind in, 250.
- MATHEMATICS, importance in science, 132; logic in, 188; Berkeley's conception of, 279; Plato's conception of, 329, 335; Spinoza's conception of, 311, 335.
- MATTER, 225, 228; and space, 229; Berkeley's refutation of, 275 ff.; in Plato and Aristotle, 334.
- MECHANICAL THEORY, practical significance of its extension to the world at large, 20; in cosmology, 161, 225; of Descartes, 231; of Newton 232; of origin of cosmos, 242; of life, 244; in Spinoza, 336.
- METAPHYSICS, relation to epistemology, 150; relation to ethics, 151, 196 ff.; definition of, 153; relation to logic, 188; relation to theology, 207; present tendencies in, 399 ff., 408.
- MILL, J. S., 283 (*note*).
- MIND, explanation of in naturalism, 237, 247 ff.; of God, in Berkeley, 284, 294, 296; absolute, 349 (*note*), 358, 382 ff. Also see under SELF, and SOUL.
- MODE, in Spinoza, 313.
- MONADS, in Leibniz, 338.
- MONISM, 159, 163.
- MORALITY, and religion, 73; grounds of, according to Kant, 356; incentive to, 422.
- MYSTICISM, general account, 171; Schopenhauer's, 290; types of religions, 391.
- NAEGELI, C. v., quoted, 287.
- NATURAL SCIENCE, true relations of, with philosophy, 116; sphere of, with reference to philosophy, 117 ff.; philosophy of, its procedure, 121, 135, 142, 154, 401; origin of, as special interest, 123 ff.; human value of, 126, 127, 143; method and fundamental conceptions of, 406, 128 ff.; general development of, 134; limits of, because abstract, 136 ff., 414; validity of, 142; logic and, 188; development of conceptions in, 229 ff.; grounds of, according to Kant, 355, 377; Hume on, 377; permanence and progress in, 395 ff.
- NATURAL SELECTION, 204, 245.
- NATURALISM, chap. viii; general meaning, 217, 223 (*note*), 399; claims of, 239; task of, 241; criticism of, 117, 257, 263; of present day, 405, 412. Also see under MATERIALISM, and POSITIVISM.
- NATURE, 160, 244, 337; in Berkeley, 294; in Spinoza, 317, 338; in Hegel, 363; in Kant, 377 ff.; in contemporary philosophy, 401. Also see NATURAL SCIENCE, and NATURALISM.
- NEBULAR HYPOTHESIS, 242.
- NECESSITY, of will, 211; ethics of, 342; religion of, 393.

- NEO-FICHTEANS, 402, 403 (*note*).  
NEO-KANTIANS, 403.  
NEWTON, 232, 235, 242, 355, 377.  
NORMATIVE SCIENCES, the, 180.  
OMAR KHAYYAM, quoted, 16; as a philosopher-poet, 36.  
ONTOLOGICAL PROOF, of God, 200.  
ONTOLOGY, 159.  
OPTIMISM, 104, 388, 422, 424.  
PANPSYCHISM, 176, 238, 285 ff.  
PANTHEISM, in primitive religion, 78; general meaning, 205; types of, 390.  
PARKER, THEODORE, quoted on religion, 67.  
PARMENIDES, and rationalism, 168; philosophy of, 308 ff., 337; and Aristotle, 336.  
PATER, WALTER, on Wordsworth, 38; on Cyrenaicism, 260; on subjectivism, 270.  
PAULSEN, FRIEDRICH, ethics of, quoted, 302.  
PEARSON, KARL, quoted, 230.  
PERCEPTION. See SENSE-PERCEPTION.  
PERSONAL IDEALISM, 404, 405.  
PERSONALITY, of God, important in understanding of religion, 62; essential to religion? 108 ff.  
PERSONS, description of belief in, 62; imagination of, 101, 110.  
PESSIMISM, 104, 299, 424.  
PHENOMENALISM, general meaning, 176, 267 (*note*); of Berkeley, 272, 275 ff.; of Hume, 283; various tendencies in, 281.  
PHILOSOPHER, the practical man and the, chap. i; the rôle of the, 306, 426.  
PHILOSOPHY, commonly misconceived, 3; of the devotee, 13; of the man of affairs, 14; of the voluptuary, 16; of life, its general meaning, 17 ff., 153; its relations with poetry, chap. ii, 112; lack of, in Shakespeare, 33; as expression of personality, 33; as premature, 33, in poetry of Omar Khayyam, 36; in poetry of Wordsworth, 38 ff.; in poetry of Dante, 42 ff.; difference between philosophy and poetry, 48 ff.; in religion, 108 ff.; compared with religion, 112; true attitude of, toward science, 116; sphere of, in relation to science, 117, 395 ff.; procedure of, with reference to science, 121, 135, 142, 154, 160; human value of, 143, 426 ff.; can its problem be divided? 149, 155; origin of, 157; special problems of, chap. vi, vii; and psychology, 216; peculiar object of, 308; self-criticism in, 319 ff., 325; permanence and progress in, 395 ff.; contemporary, 398 ff.  
PHYSICAL. See CORPOREAL BEING, MATERIALISM, etc.  
PHYSIOLOGY, 246.  
PIETY, description and interpretation of, 72; in ethics, 195.  
PLATO, on Protagoras, 167, 269, 270, 298; quoted, on Socrates, 170, 192, 194; historical preparation for, 324; psychology of, 209; philosophy of, 306, 318, 326 ff., 382; and Aristotle, 333; and Spinoza, 318, 335; epistemology of, 339; ethics of, 342; religion of, 346, 391, 393; on evil, 352; on spirit, 359; on reason and perception, 370; on the philosopher, 426.  
PLURALISM, general meaning of, 159, 163, 419; in ethics, 302, 421 ff.; in religion, 304.  
POETRY, relations with philosophy, chap. ii; as appreciation, 25; virtue of sincerity in, 27; the "barbarian" in, 28; constructive knowledge in, 30; difference between philosophy and, 48 ff.  
POSITIVISM, on relation of philosophy and science, 115,

- 122; general meaning of, 168, 234, 252 ff., 412.
- PRACTICAL KNOWLEDGE, of means, 8 ff.; of end or purpose, 10 ff.; implied in religion, 85, 97, philosophy as, 153.
- PRACTICAL MAN, the, and the philosopher, chap. i; his failure to understand philosophy, 3; his ideal, 14; virtually a pluto-sopher, 22.
- PRAGMATISM, 151, 407, 408.
- PRAYER, 103.
- PREDICTION, in science, 130.
- PRESENT DAY, philosophy of the, 398 ff.
- PROTAGORAS, scepticism of, 166, 271; subjectivism of, 269; ethics of, 298.
- PSYCHOLOGY, of religion, 58, 82; inadequate to religion, 82; as branch of philosophy, 208 ff., 216; as natural science, 213; affiliations of, 215; limits of, 415.
- PSYCHO-PHYSICAL PARALLELISM, 215, 252.
- PURPOSE, in life, 10 ff.; adoption of life-purpose, 17 ff.; practical significance of, in the world at large, 20. Also see TELEOLOGY, IDEAL, etc.
- QUALITIES, primary and secondary, 254, 274, 277.
- RATIONALISM, general meaning, 168, 416; in logic, 180, 184; in ethics, 193; of eleatics, 310; of Spinoza, 811; in absolute realism, 339; criticism of, 418.
- REALISM, various meanings of term, 173 (*note*); meaning of, as theory of knowledge, 172; of Parmenides, 308 ff.; of Plato and Aristotle, 341; of present day, 409 ff.
- REASON, 370. See RATIONALISM.
- RELATIVISM, 166, 267 ff.; in ethics, 298.
- RELIGION, chaps. iii, iv; relation to poetry and phi-
- losophy, 49, 52; difficulty of defining, 53; possibility of defining, 54; profitableness of defining, 54; true method of defining, 55; misconceptions of, 56; as possessing the psychological character of belief, 59 ff.; degree of, in individuals and moods, 60, 61; definition of, as belief in disposition of universe, 64 ff., 82; and morality, 73; symbolism in, 75; prophet and preacher of, 75; conveyance of, 76; primitive, 77; Buddhism, 78; the critical or enlightened type of, 80; means to be true, 82 ff.; implies a practical truth, 85; cases of truth and error in, 88 ff.; of Baal, 88; Greek, 89; of Jews, its development, 92; Christian, 94; definition of cognitive factor in, 97; place of imagination in, 80, 97 ff.; special functions of imagination in, 101 ff.; relation of imagination and truth in, 105; philosophy implied in, 108 ff.; is personal god essential to, 108; compared with philosophy, 112; compared with science, 145; special philosophical problems of, 199 ff.; of naturalism, 263 ff.; of subjectivism and spiritualism, 302 ff.; of Plato and Aristotle, 346, 393; of Stoics and Spinoza, 348, 393; philosophy of, in Hegel, 365; of absolute idealism, 390 ff.
- RELIGIOUS PHENOMENA, interpretation of, 69 ff.
- REPRESENTATIVE THEORY, of knowledge, 174, 412.
- ROMANTICISM, 361.
- ROUSSEAU, quoted on nature, 64.
- ROYCE, JOSIAH, quoted on absolute idealism, 178, 384, 394.
- SANTAYANA, GEORGE, quoted on poetry 28, 29.

- SCEPTICISM, 166, 267 ff. See under POSITIVISM, and AGNOSTICISM.
- SCHELLING, misconception of science, 116.
- SCHOLASTICISM, 333; idea of God in, 201.
- SCHOPENHAUER, his panpsychism or voluntarism, 177, 285 ff.; universalizes subjectivism, 290, mysticism of, 290; ethics of, 299; religion of, 303.
- SCIENCE. Also see under NATURAL SCIENCE, and NORMATIVE SCIENCE.
- SECULARISM, of Shakespeare, 34; of Periclean Age, 320; of present age, 427.
- SELF, problem of, 216; proof of, in St. Augustine, 372; proof of, in Descartes, 374; deeper moral of, 387; in contemporary philosophy, 411, 413. Also see SOUL, and MIND.
- SELF-CONSCIOUSNESS, essential to human life, 6; development of conception of, 371 ff.; in absolute idealism, 383; in idealistic ethics, 386.
- SENSATIONALISM, 247, 255, 269.
- SENSE-PERCEPTION, 168, 247, 269, 370, being as, in Berkeley, 281.
- SHAKESPEARE, general criticism of, 30 ff., his universality, 31; lack of philosophy in, 33.
- SHELLEY, quoted on poetry, 50.
- SOCIAL RELATIONS, belief inspired by, analogue of religion, 62; imagination of, extended to God, 101.
- SOCRATES, rationalism of, 169; and normative science, 180; ethics of, 192, 194; method of, 321 ff.
- SOPHISTS, the, epistemology of, 165; scepticism of, 271, 320; ethics of, 298, 301; age of, 320.
- SOUL, the, in Aristotle, 208; in Plato, 209; as substance, 209; intellectualism and voluntarism in theory of, 210; immortality of, 212; Berkeley's theory of, 284. Also see under MIND, and SELF.
- SPACE, importance in science, 130; and matter, 229.
- SPENCER, 236 (*note*), 243, 265.
- SPINOZA, and Goethe, 51; quoted on philosophy and life, 153; philosophy of, 306, 311 ff.; criticism and estimate of, 315 ff.; and Plato, 318, 335; and Aristotle, 336; epistemology of, 339; ethics of, 342; religion of, 348, 392, 393.
- SPIRIT, the absolute, 358 ff.
- SPIRITUALISM, general meaning, 176, 267 (*note*); in Berkeley, 280, 292; in Schopenhauer, 285; criticism of, 288; objective, 292.
- STEVENSON, R. L., quoted on religion, 67.
- STOICISM, ethics of, 342; religion of, 348.
- SUBJECTIVISM, chap. ix; general meaning, 175, 218, 267 (*note*), 415; in aesthetics, 190; of Berkeley, 275 ff.; universalization of, in Schopenhauer, 290; criticism of, 297, 415; ethics of, 298 ff.; in absolute idealism, 368; of present day, 409.
- SUBSTANCE, spiritual, 209, 284; material, Berkeley's refutation of, 275 ff.; Spinoza's conception of, 311; the infinite, in Spinoza, 312; Aristotle's conception of, 334; Leibniz's conception of, 338.
- SYMBOLISM, in religion, 75.
- TELEOLOGY, in cosmology, 161; proof of God from, 204; Spinoza on, 318; in Plato, 326 ff., 336; in Aristotle, 336.
- THEISM, 205.
- THEOLOGY, relation to religion, 98; in philosophy, 199 ff.; relation to metaphysics, 207.
- THOMSON, J., quoted, 104.
- THOUGHT, and life, 6 ff.; as being, in Hegel, 361 ff.